

Why I Know the
Trinity Teaching is

False

An Adventist Perspective

Christ's own words:

And this is eternal life, that they may know You, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom You have sent. John 17:3

From John whom Christ loved:

Grace, mercy, and peace will be with you from God the Father and from the Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father, in truth and love. 2 John 1:3

From Paul, an Apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God:

For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus; 1 Timothy 2:5

More From Paul:

Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly things by Christ. . . Which he [God] wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, Ephesians 1:3,20 (partially from Tyndale's New Testament)
Grace be to you and peace from God the Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ, Who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of God and our Father: Galatians 1:3-4

More From John:

The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him, to shew unto his servants things which must shortly come to pass; and he sent and signified it by his angel unto his servant John: Who bare record of the word of God, and of the testimony of Jesus Christ, and of all things that he saw. Revelation 1:1-2

by Michael E. Brown Ph.D.

Why I Know the
Trinity Teaching is

False

An Adventist Perspective

By Michael E. Brown Ph.D.

Copyright 2013-2019 by Michael E. Brown

A working copy. Version 0.8.8 August 7, 2019

This work is of my own experience for sharing with friends.

To determine if there is a newer edition, click on the following link:

<http://www.creation-science-prophecy.com/SDA/SDA.pdf>

See what I am sharing with Adventists. If you find any of the pages useful, please share with other Adventists.

<http://www.creation-science-prophecy.com/SDA/>

(If the links do not work, copy the address into your browser)

CONTENTS

<u>Chapter</u>	<u>Topic</u>	<u>Page</u>
Contents		2
Introduction	I have been studying an issue that has bothered me for quite some time, possibly more than any other Biblical subject before. It has really shaken me up and I have been thinking about it ever since someone has brought it to my attention. I believe this issue is really serious and is detrimental to God's church! So, I wish to begin by introducing it to you and also to explain why I am so troubled. Then, I will substantiate the points I make in the body of this study (Chapter 1 and on).	4
1.	The Bible clearly teaches the truth about God the Father and His only-begotten Son.	33

2. The Bible clearly teaches the truth about the Spirit of the Father and Son - The Holy Spirit. **47**
3. Bible quotes that are used by some to teach the Trinity teaching. **57**
Trinity interpretations are given to various Scripture. However, they cannot be used to absolutely support the Trinity doctrine since these very same verses also fit with the real truth about God and His Son that is clearly explained in the Bible itself.
4. The Spirit of Prophecy teaches the truth about God the Father and His only-begotten Son. **66**
5. The Spirit of Prophecy teaches the truth about the Spirit of the Father & Son-the Holy Spirit. **75**
6. Spirit of Prophecy quotes that are used by some to teach the Trinity teaching. **87**
Starting with her book: *Desire of Ages*; Mrs. White is said to have changed her mind on the Trinity issue. (Or she came out in the open at that point in time.) Thus, trinitarian interpretations have been assigned to some of her later quotes. However, these statements also agree with the truth about God and His Son. Thus they are poor arguments. In addition, there are other clear statements of truth, also from her later writings, that agree with the truth about God; These are ignored. Many times these statements are even on the same page as the “Trinity statements”, yet they are still ignored! All this helps to show that Mrs. White never did change her mind on who God is.
7. The Book *Evangelism* and other Spirit of Prophecy quotes used to teach the Trinity teaching. **101**
In the book *Evangelism*, published in 1946, a list of short quotes were incorporated that seemed to strongly support the Trinity doctrine. Several things were done to make sure that these statements supported the Trinity concept. In this book Froom and others, who were on the editorial committee, were able to compile these statements giving a distorted view of Mrs. White’s understanding on God.
8. Jesus Told the Disciples how the Scriptures ought to be understood in the road to Emmaus and later to all the disciples as a group. This is the telling of my own experience leading to the road to Emmaus. Something very similar happened to the Adventist church as also happened to those disciples on the road to Emmaus and later to all the disciples. God actually gave us our doctrines and they are plainly understood from the Bible if we choose to study it. **114**
9. The truth about God and His Son are pillar doctrines of the SDA church. **122**
These were doctrines that were given to us by God. God is the architect of our understanding of the Bible through direct intervention and they have stood the test of time.
10. Mrs. White warned about big changes that were coming when she would die. **133**
We have been warned that Satan would try to get the Adventist church to give up the pillars of our faith! So, we are to hold on to these doctrines which are Bible truth!
11. What Danger is there in Accepting the Trinity Doctrine along with the New Theology? Or does it matter? How might it determine whether we will be able to stand for the right? **152**
12. What Biblical Doctrines does the Trinity Doctrine teaching destroy? Some think the Trinity issue versus the Father and His Son is only a minor problem. Not something to make a big thing out of it. This section shows why knowing the truth about God is important for our salvation. The Trinity allows for the New Theology thinking to grow in popularity. **172**

Introduction

I have been studying an issue that has really bothered me for quite some time, possibly more than any other Biblical subject before. It has really shaken me up and I have been thinking about it ever since someone has brought it to my attention. I believe this issue is really serious and the rejection of what once was known as Bible truth has been detrimental to God's church, the SDA church! So, I wish to begin by introducing the issue to you and also to explain why I am so troubled. Then, I will substantiate the points I make in the body of this study (Chapter 1 and on) from the Bible and the Spirit of Prophecy. So please hear me out.

The Adventist people were once known as the people of the Word. They knew their Bible and they could defend their faith against all people. In addition, they had a special knowledge of the Scriptures which allowed them not to fear the arguments people might attack them with, because they knew what the Bible taught. So they were able to give clear and true answers to their arguments. They had a message that was second to none.

So, how is it that Adventists have obtained this special knowledge of the Bible? This is an important question since we are being attacked from all sides. Especially from within our church. Everyone would have us accept the new theology rather than to stick with the knowledge that Adventists have always had, which made them the people of the Word.

So, where did our knowledge of the Bible come from? Our knowledge was directly given to us at the beginning of the SDA movement by God. He gave us our doctrines. God has blessed us with the truth for these last days. This is an amazing thing to say. But let's start looking at the evidence:

If we indeed have the truth for these last days, it must be carried to every nation, kindred, tongue, and people. {Counsels on Stewardship - CS 39.2}

Do we have the truth that must be carried out to every nation, kindred, tongue, and people?

It is as certain that we have the truth as that God lives; and Satan, with all his arts and hellish power, cannot change the truth of God into a lie. While the great adversary will try his utmost to make of none effect the word of God, **truth must go forth as a lamp that burneth.** {4T 595.4}

The Lord has singled us out and made us subjects of His marvelous mercy. . . . {4T 595.5}(Pub. in 1881)

We have been given the truth, thus we have indeed been made subjects of His marvelous mercy. This truth is so important that Satan is continually trying to destroy it. But it must be carried out to every nation, kindred, tongue, and people. Mrs. White also describes how powerful and convincing this truth, that we have been given, really is.

I saw that **God has given His servants the truth so clear, so plain, that it cannot be resisted.** Wherever they go, **they have certain victory.** Their enemies cannot get round the convincing truth. **Light has been shed so clear that the servants of God can stand up anywhere and let truth, clear and connected, bear away the victory.** **This great blessing has not been prized, or even realized.** {1T 129.1}

So, the truth that God has given the Adventist church is so clear and plain that it cannot be resisted. The enemies of God's truth cannot get around the convincing truth that He has given us. The Lord has singled us out and made us the subjects of His marvelous mercy and His servants, God's people, can stand up anywhere and let this truth which is clear and connected take the victory.

But we need to ask ourself: Why would God do this? Why would He “single us out” and give us so much truth from the Bible that is so clear and plain to understand. Did He give it to us for a special purpose?

In a special sense Seventh-day Adventists have been set in the world as watchmen and light bearers. To them has been entrusted the last warning for a perishing world. On them is shining wonderful light from the word of God. They have been given a work of the most solemn import--the proclamation of the first, second, and third angels' messages. There is no other work of so great importance. They are to allow nothing else to absorb their attention. {9T 19.1}

The most solemn truths ever entrusted to mortals have been given us to proclaim to the world. The proclamation of these truths is to be our work. The world is to be warned, and God's people are to be true to the trust committed to them. They are not to engage in speculation, neither are they to enter into business enterprises with unbelievers; for this would hinder them in their God-given work. {9T 19.2}

We were given the special light for these last days, present truth, to be watchmen and light bearers so we can give this light to the world. This is such an important work. It is the very purpose that the Seventh-day Adventist church had from the beginning, to give the three angels messages to the world. We have been given this special light that is to be proclaimed to the world.

Christ says of His people: **“Ye are the light of the world.”** Matthew 5:14. **It is not a small matter that the counsels and plans of God have been so clearly opened to us. It is a wonderful privilege to be able to understand the will of God as revealed in the sure word of prophecy. This places on us a heavy responsibility. God expects us to impart to others the knowledge that He has given us. It is His purpose that divine and human instrumentalities shall unite in the proclamation of the warning message. {9T 19.3}**

So, God has made us the light of the world and He has shared with us his counsels and plans that we can do this wonderful work uniting with divine powers to warn the world. If God places on us this heavy responsibility, we should be doing something about it. Shouldn't we? Should we not be getting ready to call the whole world out of Babylon with the “Loud Cry”? Should we not be presently sharing our faith with others? Shouldn't we also be overcoming our sins with Christ's righteousness so that we can do this great work?

However, in today's Adventist church, this special blessing has not been prized or even realized as it should be, and most of us have not even studied it. We do not know how clear, plain, and convincing the truth really is; And now, most Adventists actually believe Satan's arguments without studying it. They have taken the easy road by listening to the pastors and leaders of our church, against the truth; Just like all the other churches.

This great blessing has not been prized, or even realized. {1T 129.1 last part}

Mrs. White has warned what would happen toward the end of time. She said a great change would take place in our church. Adventists would be directed in giving up the doctrines that are the pillars of faith that God has given us:

The enemy of souls has sought to bring in the supposition that **a great reformation was to take place among Seventh-day Adventists, and that this reformation would consist in giving up the doctrines which stand as the pillars of our faith, and engaging in a process of reorganization**. Were this reformation to take place, what would result? **The principles of truth that God in His wisdom has given to the remnant church, would be discarded. Our religion would be changed**. The fundamental principles that have sustained the work for the last fifty years would be accounted as error. {First Selected Messages - 1SM 204.2 (first part of paragraph)}

God has clearly given the Adventists church a clear understanding of Bible prophecy and the truths that will be needed for us to survive the last days. And we were raised to prepare the world with present truth, especially the three angel's messages against the attacks of Satan which includes his mark of the beast. Yet we are quickly losing our knowledge and our ability to fight error and sin, and of warning the whole world. Satan has been trying to take these pillars of our faith from our beliefs. Many or most of us no longer believe the pillars of truth to be true.

But I am getting ahead of myself. Lets see how we were originally given that truth that we have. Here is an early example showing how we received the truth for these last days. Elder and Mrs. White had just been married and after their first son was born they went to Volney in 1848. The work was new and there were few believers:

Our first Conference in New York was held at Volney, in a brother's barn. About thirty-five were present--all that could be collected in that part of the state. But of this number, **hardly two were agreed. Some were holding serious errors, and each strenuously urged his own views, declaring that they were according to the Scriptures.** {1T 86.2}

These strange differences of opinion brought a heavy weight upon me, as it seemed to me that God was dishonored; and I fainted under the burden. Some feared that I was dying; but the Lord heard the prayers of His servants, and I revived. The light of heaven rested upon me, and I was soon lost to earthly things. **My accompanying angel presented before me some of the errors of those present, and also the truth in contrast with their errors. These discordant views which they claimed to be according to the Bible were only according to their opinion of the Bible,** and they must yield their errors and unite upon the third angel's message. Our meeting closed triumphantly. **Truth gained the victory. The brethren renounced their errors, and united upon the third angel's message, and God greatly blessed them and added to their numbers.** {1T 86.3}

In the next meeting place, they found more who cherished error. In addition they were listening to error.

From Volney we went to Port Gibson to attend a meeting in Brother Edson's barn. There were those present who loved the truth, **but were listening to and cherishing error.** The Lord wrought for us in power before the close of that meeting. **I was again shown in vision the importance of the brethren in western New York laying aside their differences, and uniting upon Bible truth.** {1T 86.4}

So, the early Adventists were not to rest upon their own opinion of the Bible. They were also not to listen to error. They were to stay away from error and unite on the actual Bible truth. From God through an angel, the truth of God's word was explained so that the early Adventists could know what the truth really is and the victory was given them to renounced their errors. It is really important to lay aside our differences and unite on Bible truth. We will see other more powerful examples of God's leading later.

Yes, in these last days, the Adventists have been singled out to receive His marvelous mercy. This is how we were able to received the truth like no other group. God gave us the truth and this truth must be sent forth to the world as a lamp that burns to every nation, kindred, tongue, and people.

Twenty five years later, Mrs. White was still able to say that the early SDA church really had the truth and that it was the working of the Lord's Holy Spirit that helped to establish this truth:

. . . **The truths that we have been proclaiming for more than half a century** have been contested again and again. Again and again the facts of faith have been disputed; **but every time the Lord has established the truth by the working of His Holy Spirit.** Those who have arisen to question and overthrow the principles of

present truth, have been **sternly rebuked**. (Letter 95, 1905) Note: this is after Desire of Ages was published. {10MR 45.2}

So, God established the truth through the Holy Spirit. While Mrs. White was alive, those who wanted to change our doctrines to be like the other churches were sternly rebuked. However, after Mrs. White was laid to rest, she was no longer there to stop their work. So, many of our doctrines have since changed. Now, many continue to believe that our doctrines have not really changed very much. They think that when they read Mrs. White and see that she says to hold on to the last day “Present Truth”, the faith that was given to us; They may think that we are doing just that. But is it true?

William Johnsson, in his attempt to suggest that historic Adventism will fail, shows that many have indeed sought to go back to what Adventists have once believed. However there are others who think Adventist’s beliefs have essentially remained unchanged:

Some Adventists today think, that our beliefs have remained unchanged over the years, or they seek to turn back the clock to some point when we had everything just right. But all attempts to recover such “historic Adventism” fail in view of the facts of our heritage. {Adventist Review Jan 6, 1994 p. 10, written by William G. Johnsson, Editor of the Adventist Review, Article “*Present Truth - Walking in God’s Light*” .}

The beliefs of the SDA church has indeed changed. Many Adventists, including Historic Adventists, have been disturbed by the “New Theology”, which has entered into the church since the 1950s, and rightly so. This New Theology has replaced the Old Theology in today’s church and many knew it to be error! God gave us “Present Truth”, that Old Theology which the Adventist church has now rejected. Thus, many have rejected this new theology and they continued to believe the old standard teachings that our church had believed. Now, I had this understanding and I believed it. But around 2006 I was really surprised when I read the following statement by George Knight:

“Most of the founders of Seventh-day Adventism would not be able to join the church today if they had to subscribe to the denomination’s fundamental beliefs. Most specifically, most would not be able to agree to belief number 2, which deals with the doctrine of the Trinity. For Joseph Bates the Trinity was an unscriptural doctrine, for James White it was that ‘old Trinitarian absurdity,’ and for M.E. Cornell it was a fruit of the great apostasy, along with such false doctrines as Sunday-keeping and the immortality of the soul. ” {Ministry magazine Oct. 1993 p. 10, Article: “*Adventists and Change*”, Written by George Knight}

We might expect change, but here I was seeing a change in our fundamental belief that is so big that the pioneers would NOT be able to be members in today’s church. It was over something that I was just in the process of researching, becoming aware of the problem! Where were the descriptions on how this doctrine got changed and why? Why has it been kept quiet?

This topic of the Trinity versus the Father and His Son may seem like a side issue. However, as we will see later, our conception of who God really is, directly affects our major doctrines: like the three angels messages, how we are saved, and about Christ; just to name a few. Satan has attacked these specific doctrines and we need to explore why he endeavored to change them. It will make a big difference when we start looking at the other big religious issues of the last days. But let’s start looking at the evidence:

In his effort to promote the Trinity doctrine, W. G. Johnsson describes this same change:

“Adventist beliefs have changed over the years under the impact of ‘present truth’. Most startling is the teaching regarding Jesus Christ, our Saviour and Lord. Many of the pioneers, including James White, J.N. Andrews, Uriah Smith, and J.H. Waggoner, held to an Arian or semi-Arian view that is, the Son at some point in

time before the creation of our world was generated by the Father. Likewise, the Trinitarian understanding of God, now part of our fundamental beliefs, was not generally held by the early Adventists. Even today a few do not subscribe it.” {Adventist Review Jan 6, 1994 p. 10, written by William G. Johnsson, Editor of the Adventist Review, Article “*Present Truth - Walking in God’s Light*”.

I thought his comment was interesting that “even today a few do not subscribe [to] it”. So, there must be others who know of this change and have seen the change to being a trinitarian as error.

Early on, various Adventist historians have tried to say that while some were Arian or semi-Arian, most were actually trinitarian. However, by reading what the early pioneers wrote, it became clear that most of the SDA pioneers were in fact non-trinitarian:

That most of the leading SDA pioneers were non-Trinitarian in their theology has become accepted Adventist history {Jerry Moon “*The Trinity*” p. 190}

It has now come out that essentially all the Adventist writers were anti-trinitarian:

A survey of other Adventist writers during these years (up to 1881) reveals, that **to a man, they rejected the trinity, yet, with equal unanimity they upheld the divinity of Christ.** To reject the trinity is not necessarily to strip the Saviour of His divinity. Indeed, **certain Adventist writers felt that it was the trinitarians who filled the role of degrading Christ’s divine nature.** {Russell Holt “*The doctrine of the Trinity in the Seventh-day Adventist denomination, its rejection and acceptance*”, A term paper for Dr. Mervyn Maxwell 1969}

When he says “to a man” he means that virtually every Adventist rejected the trinity. In addition, we find that all the early Adventist pioneers also upheld the divinity of Christ. The early Adventist church was united on these points! This seems strange to many today, since most Christians, as well as today’s SDAs, believe that to deny the trinity is also to deny that Jesus is divine. But the Adventist pioneers believed that it was the trinitarians who degraded Christ’s divine nature. They believed that it was the Trinitarians who were robbing Christ of His real or actual divinity.

So, how could the early Adventists reject the trinity and yet say that Jesus is fully divine? This is the reason: They believed that Jesus was fully divine because they believed He really is God’s Son, that He came out of His Father. So, just as the children of a man and woman are fully human because they came from human parents; Jesus is fully divine because He came from God Himself. The early Adventists also believed that Jesus was equal with God because He had inherited His nature from His Father:

... “**God so loved the world, that he gave his only-begotten Son,**” -- **not a son by creation, as were the angels, nor a son by adoption, as is the forgiven sinner, but a Son begotten in the express image of the Father’s person, and in all the brightness of his majesty and glory, one equal with God in authority, dignity, and divine perfection. In him dwelt all the fullness of the Godhead bodily.** (See Hebrews 1:2-8) {Signs of the Times - ST, May 30, 1895 par. 3}

We can see that Mrs. White taught what all Adventists taught. She taught that God’s Son was not created, nor was he adopted; But she said that the Son was literally begotten by the Father. So, the Son came out of God with the same glory and divinity as His Father.

3 Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high;
4 Being made so much better than the angels, as **he hath by inheritance** obtained a more excellent name than they.

5 For unto which of the angels said he at any time, **Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee?** And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son? Hebrews 1:3-5

The unitarians believed that Jesus was created like all the rest of us. This is called Arianism. But the early Adventists did NOT believe that Jesus was created! Instead, they believed that He was born, having come out of God His Father, that He is the only begotten Son of God, and that He came out of the Bosom of God (John 1:18). That means the Son had a beginning. It is only the Eternal Father who has always existed. He is the unchangeable one!

The Eternal Father, the unchangeable one, gave his only begotten Son, tore from his bosom Him who was made in the express image of his person, and sent him down to earth to reveal how greatly he loved mankind. He is willing to do more, “more than we can ask or think.” An inspired writer asks a question which should sink deep into every heart: “**He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all,** how shall he not with him also freely give us all things? (Rom. 8:32)” {Review and Herald - RH, July 9, 1895 par. 13.}

Let's look a bit at what some of the early pioneers wrote concerning God and the divinity of Christ. In 1878, a reader of the Review and Herald asked if Seventh-day Adventists were unitarians or trinitarians:

Neither. We do not believe in the three-one God of the Trinitarians nor in the low views of Jesus Christ held by unitarians. **We believe that Christ was a divine being,** not merely in his mission, **but in his person also.** . . . {Review and Herald - RH June 27, 1878 “*To correspondents*”}

So, we see that the official answers given to people who wrote in to the Review and Herald are that Jesus is the actual Son of God and that He is fully divine. Here is another important point concerning our Atonement through Christ:

Many theologians really think that the Atonement, in respect to its dignity and efficacy, rests upon the doctrine of a trinity. But we fail to see any connection between the two. To the contrary, the advocates of that doctrine really fall into the difficulty which they seem anxious to avoid.

Their difficulty consists in this: They take the denial of a trinity to be equivalent to a denial of the divinity to be equivalent to a denial of the divinity of Christ. Were that the case we should cling to the doctrine of a trinity as tenaciously as any can; but it is not the case.

They who have read our remarks on the death of the Son of God know that **we firmly believe in the divinity of Christ;** But we cannot accept the idea of a trinity, as it is held by Trinitarians without giving up our claim on the dignity of the Sacrifice made for our redemption. {J.H. Waggoner “*The Atonement in light of Nature and Revelation*”, 1884 Edition, Chapter “*Doctrine of a Trinity Subversive of the Atonement*”}.

It is a big issue to deny the trinity because in most people's eyes, they are also denying that Jesus is divine. However the early Adventists realized that the dignity of the Atonement was at stake. The robbing of Christ involved His sacrifice on Calvary. Did the Son of God really die, or was it only a human form that died because the trinity was actually in heaven and even one part of the trinity god cannot die?

In this next quote, one of two Adventists were speaking to a couple of Congregationalists. Then one of the men asked: Do you believe in the divinity of Christ?” That was when the second Adventist entered the conversation:

I now thought it was my turn to join in; so I replied, “Why, yes sir. **We believe that Christ is all divine; that in him dwell ‘the fullness of the God-head bodily;**’ That ‘he is the brightness of the Father's glory’, ‘the

express image of his person', 'upholding all things by the word of his power'. {R&H June 25, 1867 brother Johnston, letter to Uriah Smith}

Other Christians believed that since Adventists did not believe in the trinity that they also did not believe in the divinity of Christ, like the unitarians and Jehovah's Witnesses. This next quote is the response to a question sent into the Review and Herald:

To A.S. You are correct in saying **we do not deny the divinity of Christ**. If those who assert such a thing are acquainted with our faith, they know better; if they do not know they are guilty of speaking evil of the thing they know not. {R&H July 14, 1868}

From this answer, we can understand that it should have been a well known fact that the early Adventists did not deny the divinity of Christ. If anybody knew anything about our faith back then, they would know without a shadow of a doubt that the Adventists believed in the divinity of Christ.

This missionary seemed very liberal in his feelings toward all Christians. But after catechizing us upon the trinity, and finding that we were not sound upon the subject of his triune God, he became earnest in denouncing unitarianism, which takes from Christ his divinity, and leaves him but a man.

Here, as far as our views were concerned, he was combating a man of straw. **We do not deny the divinity of Christ. We delight in giving full credit to all those strong expressions of Scripture which exalt the Son of God.** We believe him to be **the divine person addressed by Jehovah in the Words, "Let us make man."** Give the Master **all that divinity with which the Holy Scriptures clothe him.** Our adorable Redeemer thought it not robbery to be equal with God, and let all the people say, Amen! {James White R&H June 6, 1871 "Western Tour"}

We can see that the Adventists were constrained to the expressions of Scripture. Thus, they gave full credit to all those strong expressions in the Bible which exalt the Son of God. Adventists gave all the divinity that the Holy Scriptures had clothed him. This shows that the Adventists were willing to follow the Bible even if it meant they would have to have doctrines which are not popular. Also, some have dared to say that James White denied the truth about God and His Son. But these assertions have proved incorrect. James White was a strong supporter of this truth and also on the divinity of Christ as were virtually all the early Adventist preachers.

Here are the first two points of the original SDA Fundamental Beliefs printed in 1872. (The beliefs were reprinted in 1889 with slight revisions.) As you will see, there is no Trinity in these beliefs. Also we can see that they also believed that the Holy Spirit is God's representative and is often called the Spirit of God or the Spirit of Jesus.

I. That there is one God, a personal, spiritual being, the creator of all things, omnipotent, omniscient, and **eternal**; infinite in wisdom, holiness, justice, goodness, truth, and mercy; unchangeable, **and everywhere present by his representative, the Holy Spirit.** Ps. 139:7.

II. That there is one Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of the Eternal Father, the one by whom he created all things, and by whom they do consist; that he took on him the nature of the seed of Abraham for the redemption of our fallen race; that he dwelt among men, full of grace and truth, lived our example, died our sacrifice, was raised for our justification, ascended on high to be our only mediator in the sanctuary in heaven, where, through the merits of his shed blood, he secures the pardon and forgiveness of the sins of all those who penitently come to him; and as the closing portion of his work as priest, before he takes his throne as king, he will make the great atonement for the sins of all such, and their sins will then be blotted out (Acts 3:19) and borne away from the sanctuary, as shown in the service of the Levitical priesthood, which foreshadowed and prefigured the ministry of our Lord in heaven. See Lev. 16; Heb. 8:4, 5; 9:6, 7; etc. {NOTE: Read the original SDA Fundamental Beliefs on the internet - There are two editions which are very similar

- 1) https://7thdayhomechurch.org/Resources/1872_-_Statements_of_Belief.pdf
- 2) https://7thdayhomechurch.org/Resources/1889_-_Revised_Statements_of_Belief.pdf }

When the Protestant churches came out of the Catholic church they unfortunately did not come out of all the error they were in. These false teachings, including the Trinity, became part of the doctrines of the various Protestant churches. James White describes how these errors will be left behind as God's people approach the end. They will love the truth as it is declared in the Bible.

As fundamental errors, we might class with this counterfeit sabbath **other errors which Protestants have brought away from the Catholic church**, such as sprinkling for baptism, **the trinity**, the consciousness of the dead and eternal life in misery. The mass who have held these fundamental errors, have doubtless done it ignorantly; **but can it be supposed that the church of Christ will carry along with her these errors till the judgment scenes burst upon the world? We think not.** "Here are they [in the period of a message given just before the Son of man takes his place upon the white cloud, Rev. 14:14] that keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus." **This class, who live just prior to the second advent, will not be keeping the traditions of men, neither will they be holding fundamental errors relative to the plan of salvation through Jesus Christ.** And as the true light shines out upon these subjects, and is rejected by the mass, then condemnation will come upon them. {*Review & Herald*, September 12, 1854, vol. 6, no. 5, page 36, par. 8, Written by James White}

As we can see, the early Adventist, during the time that Mrs. White was alive, believed that the trinity was included in with all the other Pagan errors that most Christians held. Rather than believing in the trinity, they believed that it was only the Father who is the God that had always existed. This is why, in the Bible, that only the Father is called the ancient of days (Daniel 7:9, 13, 22). They also believed that Jesus is the Son of the Eternal Father. Jesus was God's true son in heaven and He actually came forth out of the Father, as the Bible describes. Since Jesus is God's Son, He is just like His Father. He has the name of God and He is fully divine.

But today, ever since 1980, when the Trinity doctrine was voted and accepted, the church has had a very different kind of statement. It has now taken in a doctrine that it had once held as error and it teaches that the old doctrines once held by Adventists are in error. It now teaches the Trinity doctrine:

Trinity 2: There is one God: Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, a unity of three co-eternal Persons. God is immortal, all-powerful, all-knowing, above all, and ever present. He is infinite and beyond human comprehension, yet known through His self-revelation. He is forever worthy of worship, adoration, and service by the whole creation. (Deut. 6:4; Matt. 28:19; 2 Cor. 13:14; Eph. 4:4-6; 1 Peter 1:2; 1 Tim. 1:17; Rev. 14:7.) {Read full Document: <https://www.adventistarchives.org/fundamental-beliefs-of-seventh-day-adventists.pdf> }

Instead of having the Father and the Son, the 1980 statement now has three co-eternal persons in one. Adventists now teach that the Trinity is Christian truth. However, long before this change ever took place Mrs. White actually warned the church not to change our understanding of truth regarding both God and Christ:

I entreat every one to be clear and firm **regarding the certain truths that we have heard and received and advocated.** The statements of God's Word are plain. Plant your feet firmly on **the platform of eternal truth. Reject every phase of error**, even though it be covered with a semblance of reality, **which denies the personality of God and of Christ.** {*Review and Herald - RH*, August 31, 1905 par. 11}:

Mrs. White is calling everyone to be clear and firm regarding the certain truths that we have heard and received and advocated. At that time, the Adventist church had always advocated the truth about the Father and Son. Also notice that she only calls the Father, "God". So, even the way she addresses God and Christ and also what she says, fits in with what the church has always believed in her time. She called this truth "eternal truth".

Thus, she knew that our understanding of this truth should never change. It is part of the platform of eternal truth.

Now, the word: “personality” itself means an individual or a distinct person. So, “The personality of God” and “The personality of Christ” are phrases that identify both God and the Son as being distinct and different persons with different characteristics. So, they cannot both be part of the unified Trinity, but rather, they are completely separate divine persons.

. . . This is a subject that they are not to touch. It is a mystery, and the enemy will surely lead astray those who enter into it. We know that Christ came in person to reveal God to the world. **God is a person** and **Christ is a person**. Christ is spoken of in the Word as “**the brightness of His Father’s glory, and the express image of His person.**” {Ellen G. White, Talk given on May 18 10-4, Sermons and talks, Vol. 1, p. 343, Manuscript 46, 1904, ‘The Foundation of our Faith’}

They are separate persons and Christ came to reveal God, which is His Father, to the world. This is very clear language, yet it speaks of a truth that is against what most people believe today. Mrs. White believed that this is an important issue. She said that our understanding of who God is, is everything to us as a people:

You are not definitely clear on **the personality of God, which is everything to us as a people**. You have virtually destroyed the Lord God Himself. {Letter 300, 1903 EGW in letter to Kellogg. Ellen G. White: The Early Elmshaven Years Volume 5 1900-1905 Page 292 Paragraph 4 (5BIO p. 292.4)}

The question we need to ask is: Why is the personality of God everything to us as a people? Why has Mrs. White taken such a strong position on the question of who God is?

How were we Given Light for the Last Days!

In the following chapters we will look at scripture from the Bible to confirm our faith. But right now I wish to show a little of the experience that the early Adventists had through Mrs. White.

Many of our people do not realize how firmly the foundation of our faith has been laid. . . . light was given that helped us to understand the scriptures in regard to Christ, His mission, and His priesthood. A line of truth extending from that time to the time when we shall enter the city of God, **was made plain to me**, and I gave to others the instruction **that the Lord had given me**. {1SM 206.4}

The early Adventists believed that because the end of the world is coming and because Jesus is soon to come that God gave them the truths for this special time that would be necessary to survive the last days:

In the early days of the message, when our numbers were few, **we studied diligently to understand the meaning of many scriptures. At times it seemed as if no explanation could be given.** My mind seemed to be locked to an understanding of the Word; but when our brethren who had assembled for study, **came to a point where they could go no farther**, and **had recourse to earnest prayer**, **the Spirit of God would rest upon me, and I would be taken off in vision, and be instructed in regard to the relation of scripture to scripture.** **These experiences were repeated over and over and over again.** **Thus many truths of the third angel’s message were established, point by point. Think you that my faith in this message will ever waver? Think you that I can remain silent, when I see an effort being made to sweep away the foundation pillars of our faith? I am as thoroughly established in these truths as it is possible for a person to be. I can never forget the experience I have passed through. God has confirmed my belief by many evidences of his power.** {The Review and Herald - RH, June 14, 1906 par. 18}

It is very interesting that in 1906, Mrs. White could already see that some people wanted to change the foundation pillars of our faith. Because of the special experiences that the early Adventists had concerning how our teachings were given to us; Mrs. White says that her faith in this message will never waver. She says that she can never forget the experience and that she is as thoroughly established in these truths as it is possible for a person to be.

Repeatedly, God explained the Scriptures in such a marked manner, that when they later studied the Scriptures themselves; The Scriptures would actually witness to the fact that what they were just shown through Mrs. White was also the truth found in the Bible! This is how we were given the pillars of our faith.

The light that I have received, I have written out, and much of it is now shining forth from the printed page. There is, throughout my printed works, a harmony with my present teaching. **Some of the instruction found in these pages was given under circumstances so remarkable as to evidence the wonder-working power of God in behalf of his truth.** Sometimes while I was in vision, my friends would approach me, and exclaim, “Why, she does not breathe!” Placing a mirror before my lips, they found that no moisture gathered on the glass. **It was while there was no sign of any breathing, that I kept talking of the things that were being presented before me.** {Review and Herald - RH, June 14, 1906 par. 19}

Initially, many were skeptical of Mrs. White’s visions. But because of the marked manner in which it happened and the fact that more and more Scripture made sense, because of her visions, that people began to realize the truth and to believe it. Also, time and time again, she would know things about other people’s private life. (We will see an example of this on page 15 of this study.)

These messages were thus given to substantiate the faith of all, that in these last days we might have confidence in the spirit of prophecy. I thank God that he has preserved my voice, which in my early youth physicians and friends declared would be silent within three months. The God of heaven saw that I needed to pass through a trying experience in order to be prepared for the work he had for me to do. For the past half century my faith in the ultimate triumph of the third angel’s message and everything connected with it, has been substantiated by the wonderful experiences through which I have passed. This is why I am anxious to have my books published and circulated in many languages. **I know that the light contained in these books is the light of heaven.** {Review and Herald - RH, June 14, 1906 par. 20}

It is no wonder that Mrs. White would have a lot to say about the changing of our doctrines. These doctrines were directly given to Adventists by God and these doctrines were also confirmed within the Bible. In her later years she began to warn that we were not to change any of our Biblical truths that had been given to us by God. These are the pillars of our Adventist faith, the platform of eternal truth:

As a people, we are to stand firm on **the platform of eternal truth** that has withstood test and trial. We are to hold to **the sure pillars of our faith.** The principles of truth that God has revealed to us are our only true foundation. They have made us what we are. The lapse of time has not lessened their value. . . {1 Selected Messages - 1SM p. 201}

Repeatedly Mrs. White emphasized that we are not to take away the old foundations of our faith that we had been building upon for the last fifty years:

Let none seek to tear away the foundations of our faith--the foundations that were laid at the beginning of our work by prayerful study of the word and by revelation. Upon these foundations we have been building for the last fifty years. Men may suppose that they have found a new way and that they can lay a stronger foundation than that which has been laid. But this is a great deception. **Other foundation can no man lay than that which has been laid.** {8T 297.1}

We might ask: What happened? If we have been given these truths in such a marked manner which have been tested in the field; Also, if we have been warned not to change these basic beliefs; Why would we ever think to change our beliefs? The answer is obvious. Satan has fought against this truth to eradicate it:

It is the constant effort of the enemy to remove these truths from their setting, and to put in their place spurious theories. He will bring in everything that he possibly can to carry out his deceptive designs. {1 Selected Messages - 1SM p. 201}

Toward the end of her life, Mrs. White began to see that some were working to change the pillars of our faith. Thus, she worked to hold up the truth that we have been given as a people.

Do you wonder that I have something to say, when I see the pillars of our faith beginning to be moved? Seductive theories are being taught in such a way that we shall not recognize them unless we have clear spiritual discernment.--Manuscript 46, May 18, 1904, "The Foundation of Our Faith," a talk given at Berrien Springs, Michigan. {UL 152.6}

Mrs. White repeatedly warned that there were some who wanted to change the pillars of our faith:

. . . Think you that my faith in this message will ever waver? **Think you that I can remain silent, when I see an effort being made to sweep away the foundation pillars of our faith?** I am as thoroughly established in these truths as it is possible for a person to be. I can never forget the experience I have passed through. God has confirmed my belief by many evidences of his power. {Review and Herald - RH, June 14, 1906 par. 18}

Mrs. White has also indicated who it will be that will try to tear down the foundation of our faith and these will work in an underhanded and powerful way:

What influence is it would lead men at this stage of our history to work in an underhand, powerful way to tear down the foundation of our faith--the foundation that was laid at the beginning of our work by prayerful study of the Word and by revelation? Upon this foundation we have been building for the past fifty years. Do you wonder that when I see the beginning of a work that would remove some of the pillars of our faith, I have something to say? **I must obey the command, "Meet it!"** . . . {1SM 207.3}

I must bear the messages of warning that God gives me to bear, and then leave with the Lord the results. I must now present the matter in all its bearings; for the people of God must not be despoiled. {1SM 208.1}

She says that men in prominent positions in our church will do this work of Satan:

Satan has laid his plans to undermine our faith in the history of the cause and work of God. I am deeply in earnest as I write this: **Satan is working with men in prominent positions to sweep away the foundations of our faith.** Shall we allow this to be done, brethren?"{Review and Herald - RH, Nov. 12, 1903 par. 13}

Thus it will be an inside job. She said that men in prominent positions within the church will work in an underhanded and powerful way to tear down the foundation of our faith. Now, because of Mrs. White's resistance to the moving of the pillars, they had to wait until she died. So, the major change in our understanding of who God is, would happen after Mrs. White dies:

I tell you now, that **when I am laid to rest, great changes will take place.** I do not know when I shall be taken; and **I desire to warn all against the devices of the devil.** I want the people to know **that I warned them fully before my death.** I do not know especially what changes will take place, **but Satan's devices will**

be brought before the people. But they should watch every conceivable sin that Satan will try to immortalize. {Elmshaven W. C. White reporting Ellen White's words, letter, 24th February 1915} {Manuscript 1, 1915}

They will make their move after Mrs. White dies. Satan will make sure that his devices are placed before the people. So he will have our leaders deceive the people by bringing out their lies and they will bring them before the people!

Four years following Mrs. White's death, the secretive 1919 Bible conference began with open discussion of the Trinity doctrine. So, a series was presented called: *the person of Jesus*. W.W. Prescott was the presenter and his talk provided the backdrop for a major area of discussion in the conference. The following quotes give some indication on what was discussed at that time.

I would like to ask Professor Prescott if he is willing to enlarge just a little on the point of the beginning as he explained it this morning (W. E. Howell, Notes on the discussions of the 1919 bible Conference and Teachers Meeting held at Tacoma Park, Wash. D.C. July 2)

Taking the first chapter of John, the third verse: At a certain point where finite beings begin time, **it does not mean that that is where the Word began. . .**" (Prescott, *ibid*)

Can we go one step further and say that **the word was without beginning?** (H. Lacey, *ibid*)

I was going to raise the question. Are we agreed in such a general statement as this, that **the Son of God is co-eternal with the Father?** Is that the view that is taught in our schools? (Prescott, *ibid*)

It is taught in the Bible. (C.M. Sorenson, *ibid*)

Not to teach that is Arianism. Ought we continue to circulate in a standard book (He means U. Smith's book: *Daniel and the Revelation*.) a statement that **the Son is not co-eternal, that the Son is not co-eval or co-eternal with the Father? That makes him a finite being. Any being whose beginning we can fix is a finite being.** (Prescott, *Ibid*)

We have been circulating for 40 years a standard book which says that the Son is not co-eternal with the Father. That is teaching Arianism. (Prescott, *Ibid*)

Do we want to go on teaching that? (Prescott, *Ibid*)

. . .

I would like to ask **Do you think it is necessary**, or even helpful in the defining of Christian doctrine, **to go outside of the New Testament for terms to use in the definition?** (Bollman, *Ibid*)

. . .

The scripture says Christ is the only begotten of the Father. Why should we go farther than that and say that He was co-eternal with the Father? And also say that to teach otherwise is Arianism? (Bollman, *Ibid*)

I think the expression "I am" is the equivalent of eternity. I think these expressions, while they do not use the term co-eternal, are equivalent in their meaning. . . (W.W. Prescott, *Ibid*)

I think we should hold to the Bible definitions {C.P. Bollman, *ibid*}

. . .

We take the expression Co-eternal, and that is better. {W.W. Prescott, *ibid*}

. . . I think we ought not to teach that there was a time when He [the Father] produced another being who is called the son. (H.C. Lacey, *ibid*)

. . .

{Note: this is not a complete discussion. To see a complete discussion at the 1919 Bible Conference please see: <http://docs.adventistarchives.org/documents.asp?CatID=19&SortBy=1&ShowDateOrder=True> }

The questions that were raised back then are the very same kind of questions being raised today in the SDA Church. Prescott himself is the one who asked the leading question. Notice that he even suggests what the answer should be. His comments suggested that we must stay away from Arianism and thus we must accept that the Father and Son were "co-eternal".

CP Bollman wanted to stay with Bible definitions but Prescott said that the term “Co-eternal” was a better expression. It was a bold thing for Prescott to say that the term “co-eternal” is better and he changed the “feeling” in the room. Now, if we follow Bible definitions we are said to be following Arianism rather than Christianity and we are also not using the so called better expression instead of the Bible!

Arianism is the idea that the Son of God had a beginning and was created. Semi-arianism is similar except that the Son of God was begotten by God rather than being created. Both ideas indicate that the Son of God had a beginning. However, both these terms are also considered to be rather derogatory in nature because they are often presented as being opposed to Christianity! Now the term “co-eternal” suggests that both God and the Son have had no beginning. So both are said to have always existed being co-eternal. This agrees with the Trinity doctrine. Obviously, if Jesus has always existed, He cannot be the only begotten Son of God!

Caviness then came in late and wanted to say some important points.

I missed a good deal of this discussion and I do not know whether the idea is that we are to accept the so-called Trinitarian doctrine or not. {L. Cavines, Notes on the discussions of the 1919 Bible Conference and Teachers Meeting held at Tacoma Park in Wash. D. C. July 6}

What happened after this is recorded in the Stenographer’s notes.

Elder Daniells here made some suggestions as to the delegates not becoming uneasy because we are studying a subject that we cannot comprehend. He asked that these be not transcribed. (A.G. Daniells, *ibid*)

We can only guess what was said during this time. Even among those who were invited, there were some who objected and when the discussion became a little confrontational, it was ordered that the record would not be made of that part of the discussion as we just saw. It is clear that the leaders did not want what was discussed to get out to the church. In addition, the notes of the meetings were locked in a vault and was found only a short time ago.

We are not going to take a vote on Trinitarianism or Arianism, but we can think. Let us go on with the study. {A. G. Daniells, *ibid*}

The push to get certain people to think about Trinitarianism was obviously one of the major aims of the conference. But at the same time, news of what was discussed was kept from the church at large to keep those who would object to not know what happened.

There was a lot of opposition to this secret meeting. Not because of the discussions on God but because it was a secret meeting. No one actually knew what was said and the attendees were sworn to secrecy. This kind of secrecy in a meeting had never happened in the Adventist church before. A worker friend of Washburn said this was the most terrible thing that had ever happened in the church, and Washburn would later say it himself.

One of our most faithful workers said the holding of this Institute, was the most terrible thing that had ever happened in the history of this denomination. {open letter to A.G. Daniells by J. S. Washburn May 1, 1922 (Read the full letter: <http://www.remnant-prophecy.com/Desolations/Washburn%20Letters.pdf>)}

One of the best evidences that this meeting was kept extremely quiet and secret is that Washburn does not seem to know much on what was discussed. He mentions asking various attendees but none would give him an answer. {open letter to A.G. Daniells by J. S. Washburn May 1, 1922} But had he known that they were actually working to bring the Trinity doctrine into the church, he would have had plenty to say.

Washburn was a real old time Adventist. He was converted by JN Andrews, baptized by James White and he attended the 1888 General Conference session. He was George Butler's nephew as well, but Butler was on the wrong side of the issues in 1888. So, because Washburn believed his uncle, he started to wonder whether Mrs. White was really a prophet of God.

He finally decided to talk to her. So, he wrote a note and sent it to her and she said she would talk to him. In that meeting, Washburn realized that Mrs. White knew what had been said in his private life and it frightened him. He "realized that here was one who knew secrets." Her insight of the issues also inspired him. {An interview with JS Washburn by Robert J. Wieland in Hagerstown, MD. June 4, 1950 This interview is signed and attested by Washburn. (Read the actual interview: http://www.gospel-herald.com/j_s_washburn/interview.htm)} {Mrs. White also mentions a meeting she had with "young Washburn". She also speaks of his confession and conversion *EGW 1888 Materials* pages 298.1, 299.2, 317.1 }

As a result of that meeting he became known as a true believer in the Spirit of Prophecy and Mrs. White considered him a defender of the Faith, which was once delivered unto the saints. Also after the meeting, Washburn and his wife became dear friends with Ellen White. She visited their home on occasion and there are several letters that Mrs. White wrote to the couple. Washburn was a pastor in Washington at the time. {*EGW 1888 Materials* pages 850-853 Also see pages 708-713. Also of interests are some letters that Washburn wrote to Mrs. White: *Manuscripts and Memories of Minneapolis 1888* pages 174, 302-303}

Knowing his background we might now understand his response some years later when the church leaders began to openly teach the Trinity doctrine within the church:

The doctrine of the Trinity is regarded as the supreme test of orthodoxy by the Roman Catholic Church. . . the nature of the personality of God was the center, the core, the key of the teachings of Roman theology, Satan's crowning masterpiece of Apostate Counterfeit Christianity. The leading doctrines of the Roman papacy were taken directly from heathenism, -the sign of the cross, Holy water, monks, nuns, the celibacy of the priesthood, the Sunday Sabbath, etc., etc. So this Catholic doctrine of the Trinity comes from heathenism.

The doctrine of the Trinity is a cruel heathen monstrosity, removing Jesus from his true position of Divine Saviour and Mediator. . . .

. . . Satan has taken some heathen conception of a three-headed monstrosity, and with deliberate intention to cast contempt upon divinity, has woven it into Romanism as our glorious God, an impossible, absurd invention. **This monstrous doctrine transplanted from heathenism into the Roman Papal Church is seeking to intrude its evil presence into the teachings of the Third Angel's Message.**

. . . **The whole Trinity doctrine is utterly foreign to all the Bible and the teachings of the Spirit of Prophecy.** Revelation gives not the slightest hint of it. This monstrous heathen conception finds no place in all the free universe of our Blessed Heavenly Father and His Son, our Lord and Saviour, Jesus Christ.

Seventh-day Adventists claim to take the word of God as supreme authority and to have "come out of Babylon," to have renounced forever the vain traditions of Rome. If we should go back to the immortality of the soul, purgatory, eternal torment and the Sunday Sabbath, would that be anything less than apostasy? If, however, we leap over all these minor, secondary doctrines and accept and **teach the very central root, doctrine of Romanism, the Trinity, and teach that the son of God did not die**, even though our words seem to be spiritual, **is this anything else or anything less than apostasy? and the very Omega of apostasy?** {*The Trinity* by J. S. Washburn 1940 Taken from page 1, 3, 7, and 9 (See photocopy of the full letter: <https://loudcryofthethirdangel.com/wp-content/uploads/2015/01/JSWashburnTrinityLetter.pdf>) }

It is obvious that Washburn and others did not know what was discussed in the secret 1919 meetings. Two others who also held on to the truth, were the two actual sons of Mrs. White. These two sons, who outlived their mother, continued to live through the beginning changes of the theology of the church. We can see that James Edson White, the oldest son, believed just as his mother believed.

The angels, therefore, are created beings, necessarily of a lower order than their Creator. **Christ is the only being begotten of the Father.** James Edson White (son of EG White, *Past, Present and Future*, p. 52. 1909.

Only one being in the universe besides the Father bears the name of God, and that is His Son, Jesus Christ. {James Edson White *The Coming King* p. 33}

Edson had opportunity to learn directly from his mother to know who God is. But if Mrs. White had changed her mind on the Trinity, her son never picked it up. He kept believing what his parents had taught him and what the church had taught.

Willy White, the younger brother, also believed. This son was the special helper of his mother and Mrs. White was assured that her son was to receive special help from God.

It was also shown me that my son, W. C. White, should be my helper and counselor, and that the Lord would place on him the spirit of wisdom and of a sound mind. **I was shown that the Lord would guide him**, and that he would not be led away because **he would recognize the leadings and guidance of the Holy Spirit.** {1 Selected Messages p. 54-55}

Willy White was not just anyone, he was the special helper of his mother and he received special guidance from the Holy Spirit. Now, because of the things that were taught in his later years, we can see that he was saddened and perplexed. He would actually hear various ministers teaching what he recognized to be error.

The statements and the arguments of some of our ministers, in their effort to prove that the Holy Spirit is an individual as are God the Father and Christ, the eternal Son, **have perplexed me, and sometimes they have made me sad.** One popular teacher said **“We may regard Him, as the fellow who is down here running things.”**

My perplexities were lessened a little when I learned from the dictionary that **one of the meanings of personality, was characteristics.** It is stated in such a way that I concluded that **there might be personality without bodily form which is possessed by the Father and the Son.** There are many Scriptures which speak of the Father and the Son and the absence of Scripture making similar reference to the united work of the Father and the Holy Spirit or of Christ and the Holy Spirit, Has led me to believe that **the spirit without individuality was the representative of the Father and the Son throughout the universe, and it was through the Holy Spirit that they dwell in our hearts and make us one with the Father and with the Son.** {William Clarence White in a letter to H. W. Carr, April 30, 1935.}

Elder White was perplexed by the push to explain the Holy Spirit as a third individual of the “Godhead”. But he was also perplexed at the explanation of Mrs. White’s use of the word “Personality”. Those who wanted to push the trinity used this word to say that the Holy Spirit is really an individual. While Pastor Willy White knew this idea was wrong, he initially did not know what the real answer might be until he found that the word, “personality” can mean “characteristics”. In his mind, this helped to solve the problem because he now realized that the Holy Spirit could have personality without being an individual. Thus, the Holy Spirit, while not being an individual, was none-the-less a representative that possessed characteristics. It is through the Holy Spirit that the Father and the Son can dwell in our hearts so that we can become one with both of them. So, it is clear that Elder White did not believe in the Trinity nor did he believe in three individuals. He believed as Mrs. White, his mother, had taught.

But as more and more of the old timers died off, it later became easier for the leaders to introduce more and more of the Trinity Doctrine. In 1931, the fundamental beliefs were changed, in an unofficial way, to include the idea of a Godhead or Trinity. This new statement was printed starting with the *1931 Year Book*. It was worded in

such a way that it would fit both the Trinity idea as well as the original Adventist position. So, it's a little confusing since parts of it agree with the Trinity and parts of it agree with the Father and His Son. Here's the 1931 statement:

Fundamental Beliefs of Seventh-day Adventists

2. That **the Godhead, or Trinity**, consists of the Eternal Father, a personal, spiritual Being, omnipotent, omnipresent, omniscient, infinite in wisdom and love; the Lord Jesus Christ, **the Son of the Eternal Father**, through whom all things were created and through whom the salvation of the redeemed host will be accomplished; **the Holy Spirit, the third person of the Godhead**, the great regenerating power in the work of redemption. Matt. 28:19. {1931 Year Book of the Seventh-day Adventist Denomination p. 377}

Maybe because of the objection by Washburn, Longacre, French, and others; Trinitarianism was primarily limited to some of the leadership of the church but not the members until much later, after the objectors died.

One of the remarkable aspects of the history of the Seventh-day Adventist Church is the development of its position of the Trinity and the deity of Christ. **These doctrines did not become normative in the church until the middle of the twentieth century.** {Merlin D. Burt, 1996, Preface to '*Demise of Semi-Arianism and anti-trinitarianism in Adventist theology, 1888-1957*'}

The leaders really came out in the open when Walter Martin and Donald Barnhouse visited the General Conference in 1955-1957. Walter Martin was preparing a book on the SDA church and he knew that the SDA church had been changing its theology. So, he wanted to force the leaders into making up their minds {James L. Londis, *Ministry*, Aug. 1982 *Thinkers versus doers*}. Thus the real change of the church at-large is rather recent. It was not until the 1950s that the Trinity doctrine really started to be much more prominent among the laity of the church. While the Trinity doctrine was being accepted by some; by my own experience, I know that most of the lay people of the church and even some of the leaders didn't really accept the new theology until the 1980s and 1990s.

I can remember when Morris Venden gave a week of prayer in the late 1970s at Columbia Union College (now Washington Adventist University). I was a student at CUC and attended the meetings. The message apparently upset some people either at the college or in the General Conference, just a few miles away, and a second series of meetings were given a short while later by someone from the GC. He gave a message based on the old Adventist theology and message. It was plain to me that this second series was given to try to counter the new theology that Elder Venden taught. In addition, it was very unusual to have two weeks of prayer right on top of each other, back to back. The new theology is what was being promoted by Barnhouse and Martin, and that same theology was being pushed on the youth of the church. Of course it was also presented in the book *Questions on Doctrine*.

Yet I found it amazing that some did not understand what was happening. I was witness to a discussion between a bright student and our teacher before a health class. The student spoke how the subjects of the two series really complemented each other and the teacher was agreeing fully. I could not believe it at the time because I could see that the two series were on entirely opposite sides of the New Theology versus Old Theology issue.

Barnhouse was an influential fundamentalist leader and editor of *Eternity Magazine*. It was at the time of the conference that he extended to the SDA church the "right hand of fellowship" into the family of Christian churches {George Knight, *Ministry*, June 1991, *Adventism, institutionalism, and the challenge of secularization*}. Barnhouse also said that only those SDA members who believed the same way as their leaders, would be considered to be true members of the body of Christ! {Donald Barnhouse, *The truth about Seventh-day Adventism, Forward*, page 7} So, it was clear that there were many who did not agree with the change.

M. L. Andreasen, who felt very strongly against the dropping of many of our doctrines, had his own description as to what happened in those meetings with Martin and Barnhouse:

The religious journal, Christianity Today, states in the March 3, 1958 issue, that “**the Adventists today are contending vigorously that they are truly evangelical.** They appear to want to be so regarded.” Mentioning the book, **Questions on Doctrine**, it says that this “**is the Adventist answer to the question whether it ought to be thought of as a sect or a fellow evangelical denomination.**” It states further that “the book” is published in an effort **to convince the religious world that we are evangelical and one of them.** {M. L. Andreasen, letter No. 6 letter to the Seventh-day Adventist Church, 1959, ‘*The Atonement*’}

The SDA leadership clearly wanted to be known as a Christian church and not a sect. But Andreasen clearly saw what happened as real Apostasy and even worse:

This is a most interesting and dangerous situation. As one official who was not in favor of what was being done stated to me: “**We are being sold down the river.**” What a sight for heaven and earth! The church of the living God which has been given the commission to preach the gospel to every creature under heaven and call men to come out of Babylon, is now standing at the door of these churches asking permission to enter and become one of them. How are the mighty fallen! . . . **This is more than apostasy. This is giving up Adventism. It is the rape of a whole people. It is denying God’s leading in the past. It is the fulfillment of what the Spirit of Prophecy said years ago.**” {M. L. Andreasen, *ibid*}

Andreasen, a conservative Adventist, declares that this change in church doctrines is more than just an apostasy. It is the giving up of Adventism because it is doing away with the very purpose of the Adventist message! Thus it is denying how God has led us in the past. He also said it was the fulfillment of what Mrs. White had prophesied years ago. {See: Manuscript 1, 1915; 1SM 207.3; 208.1; and RH, Nov. 12, 1903 par. 13, all found on page 12 of this paper;}

I must bear the messages of warning that God gives me to bear, and then leave with the Lord the results. I must now present the matter in all its bearings; for the people of God must not be despoiled. {1SM 208.1}

Now when Martin and Barnhouse first met with the SDA leaders, the first thing they wanted to confirm was whether the SDA church really believed in the Trinity doctrine or not. {Adventist Review, Sept. 8, 1983, p. 4 and also videotaped interview with Walter Martin at Loma Linda, California, Jan. 26, 1989} So, it is clear that the Trinitarian doctrine was a major point that they had to agree on before the talks could begin. Roy A. Anderson remembers it this way:

What do you folks believe about the Trinity? was a question put to me some years ago by two gracious Christian gentlemen who came unannounced to the General Conference headquarters in Washington D. C. . . .

The answers to their earnest questions lengthened into days of prayerful discussions. Our answer concerning the Godhead and the Trinity was crucial, for in some of the books they had read that Adventists were classed as Arians. {Adventist Review, Sept. 8, 1983, p. 4}

At the conferenced interview in Loma Linda, Martin told why he wanted to know whether Adventists believed in the Trinity:

At the time Adventism was considered like Jehovah’s Witnesses, like Mormonism, like most of the major cultic structures of the day. . . . you were classified with the Jehovah’s witnesses early on, because of the Arian emphasis in Adventism. And because of the fact that you affirmed Michael the Archangel to be Christ. {videotaped conference interview with Walter Martin at Campus Hill Church in Loma Linda, California, January 26, 1989}

Thus the talks with Martin and Barnhouse would have never been made if the Trinity doctrine had not already been believed by the SDA leaders. Believing the truth about God would have shielded our Church from this kind of interaction with outside churches.

So, if believing in the Trinity is indeed an apostasy, then it's hold upon the leadership of our church has also helped open the door to an even further apostatizing involving other doctrines; Because, the meetings with Martin and Barnhouse are what helped the "new theology" to breakout into the open within our church.

Jerry Moon really "hit the nail on the head". This is really the main point to consider:

"That most of the leading SDA pioneers were non-Trinitarian in their theology has become accepted Adventist history. . . More recently, a further question has arisen with increasing urgency: **Was the pioneers' belief about the Godhead right or wrong?** As one line of reasoning goes, **either the pioneers were wrong and the present church is right, or the pioneers were right and the present Seventh-day Adventist Church has apostatized from biblical truth.** (*Trinity* by Jerry Moon, page 190)

We Need a "Thus Saith the Lord" for our Belief!

For the last 30 years or more (since the 1980 General Conference), the Adventist church has officially taken up the doctrine of the Trinity. The Trinity doctrine is also believed by most of today's Christians of the world.

Today, even to be a member of the *World Council of Churches*, a body of believers, or a church; It must believe in the Trinity in order to be accepted as a member! So, if the Adventist church has accepted the Trinity doctrine, and if virtually all the Christian churches in the world today believe in the Trinity; It must be the truth! Right? On top of that, it must be good solid Biblical truth! Right?

But, if it is truth, then why isn't the subject even found within the Bible??? It's not even explained in the Bible!!! It can only be assumed by today's Christians because there is no Scriptural evidence!!!

"The concept of the Trinity, **Namely the idea that the three are one**, is not explicitly stated **but only assumed.**" {Fernando L. Canale, the Handbook of Seventh-day Adventist Theology, Seventh-day Adventist Encyclopaedia Volume 12, page 138, *Doctrine of God.*}

This concept of a three-in-one God can only be assumed! When they say something is not explicitly stated, what they mean is that they can only interpret certain passages as having a Trinity explanation. But this is only an assumption. Here's another interesting quote from the same article:

While **no single scriptural passage states formally the doctrine of the Trinity, it is assumed as a fact** by Bible writers and mentioned several times.

Only by faith can we accept the existence of the Trinity. {*Adventist Review, Special issue, The Trinity*, vol. 158, no. 31, p. 4 undated, published in July 1981} also {Fernando L. Canale, the Handbook of Seventh-day Adventist Theology, Seventh-day Adventist Encyclopedia Volume 12, page 105, *Doctrine of God.*}

Are you sure you read what you just read??? There is no place within the whole Bible where it states formally the doctrine of the Trinity!!! "Only by faith can we accept the existence of the Trinity"!!! This is a shocking admission! They are saying that we can only accept the existence of the Trinity by faith without any evidence from the Bible! So, does that mean we must accept the Trinity doctrine without a "thus saith the Lord"??? Does that mean we must accept it only by faith since it is not found in the Bible at all???

This is a contradiction of terms.

17 So then **faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.** Romans 10:17

We have faith because of what we read and understand in the word of God! But when they say we are to accept something by faith because it is not found in the Bible. . . That is not faith brothers and sisters, that is presumption! Here is another one:

105 **Thy word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path.**

130 **The entrance of thy words giveth light;** it giveth understanding unto the simple. Psalm 119:105, 130

Our light comes from the Word of God. Thus it is the Scriptures, the hearing of the Word of God, that our faith comes from. Satan would like us to accept all sorts of doctrines that are not found in the Scriptures. We do not believe that Sunday, the first day, is the Sabbath because the Bible specifically says that the seventh day is the Sabbath. We do not believe that the wicked will burn forever because of what is taught in the Bible. So, if we don't believe in Sunday or an ever-burning hell, why would we believe in the Trinity???

20 To the law and to the testimony: **if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them.** Isaiah 8:20

This question of the Trinity should especially raise red flags in your mind if you are a Bible believing Christian; One who demands a “thus saith the Lord” from the Bible for what you believe! There is no “thus saith the Lord” concerning the three-in-one Trinity. None at all! And yet, some will say you are not even a Christian if you don't believe in the Trinity! Yet it is acknowledged that the Trinity doctrine is not found in the Scriptures!

“A lecturer at Andrews University, Michigan stated that ‘**some will tend to resist this doctrine** (of the Trinity) **because it is not found expressly stated in the Scriptures**’”. {Adventist Review Aug 20, 1993 p 8.}

It is almost as if they are surprised that one would choose the Bible over what the church organization has decided to be true. Surrounded with this kind of attitude, we better decide right now that we must know for ourselves what the Bible says!

Here are some interesting facts found in the Encyclopedia Britannica that gives us a little history into the origins of the Trinity doctrine. This is a pro-Trinity article, yet there are some very interesting facts that give evidence why the Trinity doctrine was developed:

Neither the word Trinity nor the explicit doctrine appears in the New Testament, nor did Jesus and his followers intend to contradict the Shema in the Hebrew Scriptures: “Hear, O Israel: The Lord our God is one Lord” (Deuteronomy 6:4) . . .

The doctrine [of the Trinity] developed gradually over several centuries and through many controversies. Initially, both the requirements of monotheism inherited from the Hebrew Scriptures and the implications of **the need to interpret the biblical teaching to Greco-Roman religions** seemed to demand that the divine in Christ as the Word, or Logos, be interpreted as subordinate to the Supreme Being. An alternative solution was to interpret Father, Son, and Holy Spirit as three modes of the self-disclosure of the one God but not as distinct within the being of God itself. . . It was not until the 4th century that the distinctness of the three and their unity were brought together in a single orthodox doctrine of one essence and three persons.

. . . **by the end of the 4th century**, under the leadership of . . . (the Cappadocian Fathers), **the doctrine of the Trinity took substantially the form it has maintained ever since.** . . . {Taken from Encyclopedia Britannica web page: www.britannica.com/EBchecked/topic/605512/Trinity }

So, the disciples did not believe in the Trinity. The Trinity doctrine only came about in the 4th century. This doctrine developed at the time when Paganism started coming into the church. The article above tells us that there was a **need to interpret the biblical teaching to Greco-Roman religions**. These were Pagan religions. So, they made compromises to make it easy for the Pagan believers to come into the church. This was the same time when the first Sunday law was officially endorsed, to honor the pagan sun god. Whole armies were converted to Christianity just by having them march across rivers to baptize them into the Christian church.

In addition the church attacked and forced and even killed those who would not believe in the Trinity:

The doctrine of the Trinity which was established in the church by the council of Nice, A. D. 325. **This doctrine destroys the personality of God, and his Son Jesus Christ our Lord**. **The infamous, measures by which it was forced upon the church which appear upon the pages of ecclesiastical history might well cause every believer in that doctrine to blush.** {J. N. Andrews, March 6, 1855, *Review & Herald*, vol. 6, no. 24, page 185}

The people who would not believe in the Trinity were called Arians instead of Christians. People who persisted in the truth about God were killed. Whole groups of people were blotted out of existence. So, when the Protestants came along, they “inherited” the Trinity belief from the Catholic church that they were leaving.

As fundamental errors, we might class with this counterfeit sabbath other **errors which Protestants have brought way from the Catholic church**, such as sprinkling for baptism, **the trinity**, the consciousness of the dead and eternal life in misery. The mass[es] who have held these fundamental errors, have doubtless done it ignorantly; but can it be supposed that the church of Christ will carry along with her these errors till the judgment scenes burst upon the world? **We think not.** {James White, September 12, 1854, *Review & Herald*, vol. 6, no. 5, page 36, par. 8}

The Trinity doctrine is obviously a compromise of the Christian religion with pagan ideas and the Protestants never broke free from it. But for myself, I want to know what the Bible itself teaches with no compromises. If we were to study Ezekiel 8 and Jeremiah 7:17-20 we would see what really made God angry in the past. It was when various Pagan beliefs and practices were actually taking over the worship of God in the Temple of God in Jerusalem! The things that are happening today have happened before, in the past. History repeats itself!

In my own study, I have found that the bible clearly teaches that God is a single entity; There is one God. He is God the father.

Hear, O Israel: The LORD our God **is one LORD**: Deuteronomy 6:4

In addition the Bible teaches that God has an only begotten Son that came out of God Himself.

Grace, mercy, and peace will be with you **from God the Father** and **from the Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father, in truth and love.** 2 John 1:3

Now, I have also found this truth to be extensively found throughout the Bible.

And this is eternal life, **that they may know You, the only true God**, and **Jesus Christ whom You have sent.** John 17:3

For **there is one God** and **one Mediator between God and men, the Man Christ Jesus**, 1 Timothy 2:5

Grace, mercy, and peace will be with you **from God the Father** and **from the Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father**, in truth and love. 2 John 1:3

The Father is the only true God and Jesus Christ is the Son of the Father, the one that God has sent to us. So, there is definitely no Trinity teaching found in these verses. In Chapter 1 and 2 of this study, you will see much more evidence showing that the Father and His Son is what the Bible teaches all through it's pages, not the Trinity!

Some people suppose that Jesus is called the Son of God because He was born on earth as a man. So they believe He became the Son at that time. But there are clues in the Bible which show us that He was the Son of God long before He ever came to our world as one of us:

16 “For God so loved the world that **He gave His only begotten Son**, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life. John 3:16

In order for God to give us His Son, He had to have had a Son to give. That's the way the text reads and it's at the very heart of the Gospel. God loved us so much that He gave His most prized possession, His Son. In chapter 1 there will be more clues.

In addition, I have found absolutely no support for the idea that God is in the form of a Trinity within the Bible. The Trinity just isn't explained or even mentioned anywhere within the pages of the Bible. This is in spite of the fact that our theologians, leaders, and pastors continue to say that the Trinity is suggested many times. We will look into the things that they suggest, to see which is correct.

These “same” theologians also say that Mrs White eventually began believing toward the Trinity idea herself and they present a list of quotes which supposedly show that Mrs. White actually supported the idea of the Trinity. However, Mrs. White actually prophesied that people would one day try to convince us to believe strange doctrines and they will say that Mrs. White taught it herself:

“Soon every possible effort will be made to discount and pervert the truth of the testimonies of God's Spirit. . . . There will be those once united with us in the faith who will search for new, strange doctrines, for something odd and sensational to present to the people. They will bring in all conceivable fallacies, and will present them as coming from Mrs. White, that they may beguile souls” {Selected Messages, bk. 1, pp. 41}

This is another shocking point! To think that they will use Mrs. Whites writings to say that she believed in these falsehoods. This is so they can convince church members that what they are presenting is really truth. But in reality they are teaching fallacies to beguile souls!

So, we need to be sure that we understand what she is really saying because they will teach that Mrs. White herself has actually taught these doctrines of devils. The following quotes are clear, showing that Christ is one with the eternal Father, the only one who could enter into all the counsels and purposes of God, and also that Lucifer is next to Christ! So, there can be no Holy Spirit as a third person of a Trinity!

Christ, the Word, the only begotten of God, was one with the eternal Father--one in nature, in character, in purpose--**the only being that could enter into all the counsels and purposes of God.** {PP 34.1}

Notice that only the Father is called eternal and Christ is called the only begotten of God. This description does not agree with the trinity idea. Also, if the Son is the only being that could enter into all the counsels and purposes of God, than what about the Holy Spirit? Notice the next statement. If Lucifer is next to Christ in

being the most honored of God, what about the Holy Spirit? Why is “He” left out? Also, notice that in both of these statements, Christ is the one who is honored by God. He is the only one who can enter into the counsels of God. God is the one honoring the Son!

“Sin originated with him [Lucifer] who, next to Christ, had been most honored of God” {PP 35.1}

Here she says that the Father and the Son are the only ones to be exalted! I have never seen any statement say that we are to exalt the Holy Spirit.

“. . . learned men of the age, who know not God, nor Jesus Christ whom He has sent. The Father and the Son alone are to be exalted.” {The Youth’s Instructor, July 7, 1898 par. 2.}

The Youth’s Instructor quote came out in the same year as the *Desire of Ages* which is the publication that is said to exhibit Mrs. White’s new statements that agree with the Trinity. Yet here is a quote from the same time, and it is clearly against Trinitarianism! As you will see, there are many more and many are actually found within the *Desire of Ages* itself.

In these statements and in many others, Mrs. White clearly teaches that God is the Father of Christ and Jesus is the Son of God. She also says Jesus was the Son of God long before he became a man on earth. There is also no mention of the Holy Spirit as a separate person from God or Christ. In addition, the truth about God and His Son is found all throughout her writings. In this study we will be looking into the changes suggested by the theologians to see if there is any truth to Mrs. White changing her mind on what or who God is.

My reading of Mrs. White and of the early SDA pioneers, also shows that the SDA church originally did not believe in the Trinity teaching. They were actually very much opposed to both Trinitarian and Unitarian (The Arian belief, that the Son of God was a created being) beliefs.

The inexplicable Trinity that makes the Godhead three-in-one and one-in-three, is bad enough; but that ultra Unitarianism that makes Christ inferior to the Father is worse. Did God say to an inferior, “Let us make man in our image?” {James White, *Review & Herald*, November 29, 1877, }

What the early Adventists believed was that God was a single entity with a physical body or form. He is God. He is also the Father of a Son. They also believed that God had His Son long before any actual creating took place. The Son of God is His only begotten Son because the Son came forth (issued forth) out of the Father. The early SDA pioneers believed that both the Father and Son are fully Divine. In addition, they also believed that the Holy Spirit is not a third person but that it is the actual Spirit of the Father which was given to His Son as well. This same Spirit, which is also called the Spirit of Christ, is now given to us for our salvation and the sharing of our faith. These points are fully explained in both Scripture and Ellen White’s writings as we will see in chapter two and five of this study.

My own Bible study has left me with only one conclusion; That Mrs. White and the early SDA pioneers were right in their beliefs because I have found the very same truths extensively written all throughout the Bible and I hope you will believe the same thing when you look at the evidence. Chapters one through five of this study are devoted to showing the data confirming that what I have just stated, is indeed true. Both the Bible and the Spirit of Prophecy teach the truth about God, not the Trinity.

Initially I was surprised to learn that “Who God and His Son are” is an Original Pillar of our Faith in the Adventist Church

Around the turn of the century, Mrs. White was led to start speaking out concerning the pillars of our faith. God was indicating that some danger was approaching and that she needed to prepare for that trouble by revealing how the foundation principles of our faith were given to our church. The problem mainly came after she died, just as she predicted. For there were some who wanted to start changing our major doctrines and indeed they began the work to bring on this change after she died. Obviously that danger has now shown itself because the major foundation principles have already been changed in the Adventist church.

We need to learn how the Adventist church was originally given the truth that it had. Mrs. White said that it was God Himself who gave us the doctrines and that He was the Masterworker behind these truths! They had also survived the test of time. She called these doctrines the old landmarks. She also called them the pillars of our faith. It was the foundation or platform that we, as a people, would always stand on till the second coming of Christ!

I knew about the original pillars of our faith. But initially, I was really surprised to learn that the personality of God and Jesus (The identity of who God and Jesus are) was actually one of the original pillars of the Adventist faith:

Those who seek to remove the **old landmarks** are not holding fast; they are not remembering how they have received and heard. Those who try to bring in theories that would remove the **pillars of our faith** concerning **the sanctuary** or concerning **the personality of God or of Christ** are working as blind men. They are seeking to bring in uncertainties and to **set the people of God adrift without an anchor**. {*Ye Shall Receive Power* 235.4} & {Manuscript Release No. 760 p. 9 par. 6}

So, there were people in the church who were already trying to remove two of the pillars of our faith. This is interesting because, today in the twenty-first century, these two doctrines have been attacked the most of all the doctrines of our church. But originally, the sanctuary doctrine and the truth about the Father and His Son were both considered part of the original platform that we, as a church, would always stand on! It was one of the doctrines Mrs. White said we should never change.

Now, I have found that there was indeed a change in Mrs. White's beliefs through the years. But it was not the change purposed by today's theologians in the church. It was a much earlier change. Mrs. White originally came from a church that believed in the Trinity. But she changed her beliefs to the truth about the Father and His Son, at least by 1850, when God had revealed it to them through vision. It is true that some already believed in the Father and His Son before that time, but God's leading helped the early Adventists, as a group, to become unified into the many truths of the Adventist movement. So, Mrs. White actually came out from believing in the Trinity to believing in God and His Son. Many of the SDA pioneers also came out from believing in the Trinity doctrine when they became Adventists.

A short introduction of the original pillars of the Adventist church

Early on, we as a people, actually received the truth about God from God Himself as we will see. The truth about the Father and His Son was actually part of this foundation of truth which became known as the original pillars of the Adventist church.

The original pillars of the Adventist faith are the specific doctrines that Mrs. White has confirmed as being the truth. And these are the same truths that can be extensively found throughout the Bible. These truths, she says, are the truths that we, as a people, are to keep and never change:

As a people, we are to stand firm on the platform of eternal truth that has withstood test and trial. We are to hold to the sure pillars of our faith. The principles of truth that God has revealed to us are our only true foundation. They have made us what we are. The lapse of time has not lessened their value. It is the constant effort of the enemy to remove these truths from their setting, and to put in their place spurious theories. He will bring in everything that he possibly can to carry out his deceptive designs. {Series B, No. 2 p 51 2nd paragraph} or {Selected Messages book 1 p. 201 paragraph 2}

These are pretty direct statements. We are to stand firm on the platform of eternal truth! Also, we see that Satan will especially try to work against this truth. Since Satan is doing this, our platform of truth must be very important! But these truths have been tested through Bible study and prayer. In addition these truths have withstood test and trial of being attacked; Because Adventists have had to teach and defend these Bible truths for over 50 years. These truths have been able to stand under strong test and trial.

“This foundation was built by the Masterworker, and will stand storm and tempest. {Series B, No. 2 p. 54 last part of the 2nd paragraph} or {Selected Messages book 1 p. 204 last part of the 1st paragraph}

It is God through Christ who is the Author of the truth we were given. Thus, He is the Masterworker of this foundation of truth. Since God is the one who has given us our doctrines, We might expect it to be a new development of a fuller truth than has ever been understood before. I believe that is what this foundation really is. It is a foundation that will stand storm and tempest till the end.

I also believe that these truths are what will be needed as we approach that time of trouble that is just ahead of us. Since these truths deal with our salvation, I believe the pillars of our faith could be what is especially needed, to help us be saved, as we approach the time of trouble and the coming of Jesus. So, I would expect this foundation of truth to be a brighter light than any previous Biblical truth and that it should encompass more of the Bible than any of the previous truths of the great protestant reformation. As we approach the end more and more of the Bible will be understood.

Now Mrs. White had a direct role in leading the SDA church into a proper understanding of our doctrines and she describes how God actually gave us the doctrines that form the platform and pillars of our faith.

The power of God would come upon me, and I was enabled clearly to define what is truth and what is error. {Manuscript Releases, vol. 8, p. 319, Letter 50, 1906}

... the Spirit of God would rest upon me, and I would be taken off in vision, and be instructed in regard to the relation of scripture to scripture. {The Review and Herald, June 14, 1906}

... a clear explanation of the passages we had been studying would be given me, with instruction as to how we were to labor and teach effectively. Thus light was given that helped us to understand the scriptures in regard to Christ, His mission, and His priesthood. A line of truth extending from that time to the time when we shall enter the city of God, was made plain to me, and I gave to others the instruction that the Lord had given me. {Series B, No. 2 p. 56.3 to p, 57.2} or {Selected Messages book 1 p 206-207}

We can see that God did lead us to the original truths that we once held. Mrs. White specifically was led to understand what the Bible taught. It was a deeper meaning than what most see in its pages.

So, what are the sure pillars of our faith? What is the platform of eternal truth that the Adventist people have been given? The prophet states what they are in quite a few places in her writings. However, the total list of pillars can be found from the following five quotes: Counsels to Writers and Editors pp. 29.3-30.2; 1Testimonies pp. 300.1; Ye Shall Receive Power pp. 235.4; Review & Herald, May 25, 1905 par. 23 & 24; and also Great Controversy pp. 301.1. You can see these quotes in Chapter Nine of this study.

Putting the information together we have the following list of pillars which were given to us by God (Some overlap of subjects will be seen in this list).

1. The personality of God and Jesus (Who God and Jesus are)
2. The law of God including the Seventh-day Sabbath
3. The faith of Jesus (Christ, His mission, His priesthood)
4. The Two Compartment Heavenly Sanctuary
Including: the Temple of God, the Ark containing the law of God, Christ's priesthood, Cleansing of the Sanctuary transpiring in Heaven, and having decided relation to God's people upon the earth.
5. The Three Angels' Messages (The first, second, and third angels with a fourth angel Rev. 14 & 18)
6. The testimony of Jesus (includes: The Spirit of Prophecy)
7. The nature of man
8. The Non-Immortality of the wicked (includes: the state of the dead)

So, from the Spirit of Prophecy, we can see that these truths are part of the foundation of our faith. These are pillars of truth that will never be changed for some other doctrine. It is because God is the "Masterworker". He is the source of these doctrines.

Satan will try to destroy the Old Landmarks of Our Faith!

Now, we are warned that Satan will try to get us to give up these doctrines. These doctrines must be pretty important if Satan makes a lot of effort to attack them! Thus, we are specifically warned not to give up these doctrines, at any cost! The following is just a few of many quotes found later in this study:

... **It is the constant effort of the enemy to remove these truths from their setting, and to put in their place spurious theories.** He will bring in everything that he possibly can to carry out his deceptive designs. {Series B, No. 2 p 51 2nd paragraph} or {Selected Messages book 1 p 201 paragraph 2}

Now at the present time God designs a new and fresh impetus shall be given to His work. **Satan sees this, and he is determined it shall be hindered. He knows that if he can deceive the people who claim to believe present truth, [and make them believe that] the work the Lord designs to do for His people is a removing of the old landmarks, something which they should, with most determined zeal, resist, then he exults over the deception he has led them to believe.** . . . Manuscript 13, 1889. {CW 31.1}

She says that we must with a most determined zeal, resist the removing of the old landmarks. The value of these old landmarks are extremely high and will be especially needed in the trouble of the last days, the end of our world when Jesus comes!

The enemy of souls has sought to bring in the supposition that **a great reformation** was to take place among Seventh-day Adventists, and that this reformation would consist in **giving up the doctrines which stand as the pillars of our faith**, and engaging in a process of reorganization.

Who has authority to begin such a movement? We have our Bibles. We have our experience, attested to by the miraculous working of the Holy Spirit. We have a truth that admits of no compromise. Shall we not repudiate everything that is not in harmony with this truth?" {1 Selected Messages, 204-205} or {Series B, No. 2 p 54-55}

In addition to knowing that God has given us the doctrinal pillars of our faith, through even miraculous visions, Mrs. White states that we have our Bibles! It is not enough to know what the pillars are and to believe in them. We must know by personal experience how the Bible teaches these truths. Because the enemy is trying

to convince us that the Pillars of our faith is not supported by the Bible! So, we must know for ourselves what the Bible teaches and not be confused by the half-truths that are falsely claimed to be true.

You will see a more in-depth study of the pillars of the Adventist faith in Chapter Ten.

Does it Make Sense that Mrs. White Would Change Her Mind on God When the Keeping of the Pillars of Our Faith is so Important?

Mrs. White is said to have changed her mind on the Trinity issue and thus it is believed that Mrs. White quietly started to introduce aspects of the Trinity doctrine in her book: *The Desire of Ages*. Yet this change really goes against all the warnings she herself gives that we are not to give up the pillars of our Faith. The truth about God is one of the Pillars of our Faith!

So, does this make sense: After Mrs. White says we must resist dropping the old landmarks of truth with a most determined zeal, that she would then drop one of these very same landmarks of truth and yet not even announce that she is doing so??? This supposed change would go against all her warnings saying that Satan would try to change the doctrines of the church. She would be going against all her own warnings! Thus, according to her warnings, if she really did change; She would then be teaching the doctrines of devils herself. We must remember that it is Satan who is trying to change these doctrines!

Also, to quietly change her mind and start inserting a group of new ideas, that go against the old pillars, would go against her purpose of clearly teaching the clear word of God. It would also suggest that Mrs. White herself would be involved in an underhandedly deceptive process to change our doctrines. This is “unreal” and not true! The design of this kind of process would be to mislead souls and it would only result in confusion.

Mrs. White has always been consistently teaching the clear word of God. She has never supported these kinds of changes. It is only part of Satan’s attack against the truth. Mrs. White herself says that she has not changed any of her foundational teachings!

“I understood that some were anxious to know if Mrs. White still held the same views that she did years ago when they had heard her speak in the sanitarium grove, in the Tabernacle, and at the camp-meetings held in the suburbs of Battle Creek. I assured them that the message she bears today is the same that she has borne during the sixty years of her public ministry. She has the same service to do for the Master that was laid upon her in her girlhood. She receives lessons from the same Instructor. The directions given her are, “Make known to others what I have revealed to you. Write out the messages that I give you, that the people may have them.” This is what she has endeavored to do.” {E. G. White, Review and Herald, July 26, 1906 par. 20} {1 Selected Messages p. 35. 1906}

This would have been the perfect time to say that she now believes in the Trinity. However, what she does say is that she still teaches what she taught 50/60 years ago and she is still receiving lessons from the same Instructor! She was not about to go against the truth that she knows to be truth!

I appreciate the truth, every jot of it, just as it has been given to me by the Holy Spirit for the last fifty years. I desire everyone to know that I stand on the same platform of truth that we have maintained for more than half a century. That is the testimony I desire to bear on the day that I am seventy-eight years of age.--Ms 142, 1905, pp. 1, 2. {4MR 44.5}

There is a good reason why Mrs. White appreciated every jot of the truth that God gave our church. We must not forget this point! She stood on the same platform of truth for over 50 years (at the time of her writing, 1905) because our doctrines came from God. It is as certain as God lives that we have the truth!

It is as certain that we have the truth as that God lives; and Satan, with all his arts and hellish power, cannot change the truth of God into a lie. While the great adversary will try his utmost to make of none effect the word of God, truth must go forth as a lamp that burneth. {4T 595.4}

The Lord has singled us out and made us subjects of His marvelous mercy. . . . {4T 595.5}(Pub. in 1881)

This truth that we have is truth that came directly from God. Of course, Satan is trying to make the word of God of none effect. He will try to make the truth something to be ignored.

Now, we must not forget that Mrs. White warned they will actually present their error as coming from herself. This is just one of the strategies Satan has, to turn God's truth into a lie:

“Soon every possible effort will be made to discount and pervert the truth of the testimonies of God's Spirit. . . . There will be those once united with us in the faith who will search for new, strange doctrines, for something odd and sensational to present to the people. They will bring in all conceivable fallacies, and will present them as coming from Mrs. White, that they may beguile souls” {Selected Messages, bk. 1, pp. 41}

Unfortunately, this is what happened. They first started making the changes in doctrines and then they started saying that Mrs. White taught these same things. However, because of the evidence we have just looked at, in this introduction, it makes much better sense to realize that Mrs. White never did change her mind. And that this supposed change is an attack, by Satan, brought on by certain leaders within our own church, to bring strange doctrines into the church. In addition, the theologians are even saying that it was Mrs. White herself who changed her position on the matter; Just as she prophesied. They did exactly what she said they would do.

This supposed change goes totally against her belief in the truth and when you will see the data from the Bible and her writings for yourself, it is my hope that you will also realize that “they” are the ones who have twisted her words by applying their definitions to various words. Thus they have presented lies as if they were coming from Mrs. White.

The church claims that *The Desire of Ages* changed the thinking of Seventh-day Adventists regarding Christ. However there is no evidence that I can find of this actually happening while Ellen White was still alive. All accounts during the time after it was written, says it was a good book on the life of Christ.

In addition, we will see that Mrs. White still spoke very clearly on God the Father and His Son even after *The Desire of Ages* was published. (*The Desire of Ages* was published in 1898. So please note the quotes that you will see in this study that actually were published after 1898. I will post when they were published when I have that information.)

What Danger is there in Accepting the Trinity Doctrine along with New Theology?

The replacing of God and His Son with the Trinity doctrine has affected the theology of the Adventist church in a big way. Indeed, I have become convinced that the Trinity teaching actually helped open the door for the “new theology” to enter into the church. If our leaders did not believe in the Trinity, then Martin and Barnhouse would have never talked with our men. Thus “the opening of the flood gates” that brought the new theology into our church would have never occurred.

Some don't want to consider the Trinity issue because they see it as only a minor side-issue. So my friends say: Why even look at it? It doesn't really matter.

However, the Trinity doctrine also affects the interpretation of many of the essential doctrines of the Bible in a more direct way. These are the main doctrine pillars our church has taught. Many of these doctrines are thought to be salvational-issue doctrines.

Did Jesus really die for our sins as one who was both fully human and fully divine? Are we to only believe or does our faith demand that we do something and become doers of the Word? Are we just saved only by faith or are we also to use our faith to hold on to divinity with our humanity, at the throne of grace, so we can obtain power from God to overcome our sins?

So, did God's son really become human to be our example and to overcome as we can overcome? Or do we believe that "god the son" was really in heaven with the Father and the Holy Spirit while the man Jesus was on earth? Did God's son actually die for us so that we could be cleansed; or did Jesus, only a human die, all the while the "god the son" remain in heaven? Are we now able to go to the throne of Grace and pray not only for the forgiveness of our sins but also the ability to actually repent of our sins?

Did Jesus come like us to be our example and giving us power to overcome, or was Jesus really like Adam before the fall and that it is really impossible for us to overcome. The Catholics believe that Jesus did not need to die. He only needed to suffer, and that his dying made him a failure.

These are major faith questions! The Trinity doctrine actually directs us to interpret these faith issues toward the new theology, while the original Adventist truth about God (the Father and His Son) directs us to interpret them toward the truth which is according to the original historic Adventist understanding.

Since these are salvation issues, a right and proper understanding of these doctrines does affect our salvation. I believe that it is essential that we study the Trinity issue to determine what is the actual truth, as is found in the Bible. Our eternal life with Jesus could be in jeopardy if we don't find these things out for ourselves.

I believe the change in our church could actually be an apostasy from the truth. Could it also be the Omega Apostasy? The very Apostasy that was foretold by Mrs. White to happen to our Adventist church? I believe it is the very same Apostasy! Chapter 10 of this study gives the historical evidence showing that God's people were warned of an apostasy that it would take place in the church in the last days after she died.

Plain and simple, Satan wants to take away our doctrines and replace them with the same doctrines that the world has. This will cause our defense against Satan's devices to be destroyed! This is important! We will no longer be able to defend ourselves against Satan's attacks because we will no longer have the tools to fight the battle. Thus we could lose our salvation. God gave us our "present day truth" allowing us to have the knowledge needed to be saved and to work for Him in a special way for the last days.

The Catholics say that the Trinity is the foundational doctrine of the Catholic Church. So, all their doctrines are based on the Trinity doctrine. I also believe that the truth, about God and His Son, is the foundational doctrine of the Adventist faith. It must also be the reason why it has been attacked the most along with the Sanctuary and the Three Angels Messages doctrines. We need all of these truths concerning God and how we are to obtain salvation through Christ's intercession in the heavenly Sanctuary. Jesus is our intercessor between God and man.

So, in this study which you are holding, you will see what the Bible and Spirit of Prophecy actually teaches concerning the truth about God versus the Trinity. After having studied these things, I believe you will clearly see that both the Bible and Mrs white teaches the truth about God and His Son. I also believe that if you take these things honestly, you will never be able to read the Bible with your old interpretation of God again.

In addition, this study will show that the truth about God was actually one of the pillars of our faith, and that Satan would work to change these beliefs. And that an apostasy concerning the pillars is actually predicted. The Trinity doctrine was a first step toward accepting the “New Theology” dogma that has taken over our church!

Lastly, this study will also show that the Bible really does teach that we must overcome our sins and that we have been given power by God’s Son who intercedes in our behalf within the Most Holy Place in the Heavenly Sanctuary. Thus we are to do these things in His name and in His Divine power.

1. The Bible clearly teaches the truth about God the Father and His only-begotten Son

Mrs. White indicates that the Bible clearly shows the relation between God and His Son, Christ. Then she quotes Hebrews 1:1-5 which speaks of the Son of God's beginnings in heaven. This is before Jesus ever came to this earth as a human baby! In explaining the verses, Mrs. White says that God is the Father of Christ and that Christ is the Son of God. She also says that Christ was given his exalted position that He has and that He was made equal with the Father:

The Scriptures clearly indicate the relation between God and Christ, and they bring to view as clearly **the personality and individuality of each.**

[She then quotes Hebrews 1:1-5

1 God, who at various times and in various ways spoke in time past to the fathers by the prophets,
2 has in these last days spoken to us by His Son, whom He has appointed heir of all things, through whom also He made the worlds;

3 who being the brightness of His glory and the express image of His person, and upholding all things by the word of His power, when He had by Himself purged our sins, sat down at the right hand of the Majesty on high,

4 having become so much better than the angels, as He has by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they.

5 For to which of the angels did He ever say: "You are My Son, Today I have begotten You"? And again: "I will be to Him a Father, And He shall be to Me a Son"?].

God is the Father of Christ; Christ is the Son of God. To Christ has been given an exalted position. He has been made equal with the Father. All the counsels of God are opened to His Son. {Testimonies 8, p.268 (1904) }

So, is what she says true? Does the Bible actually teach these things? Let's continue with 2 John 1:3:

3 Grace, mercy, and peace will be with you **from God the Father** and **from the Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father, in truth and love.** 2 John 1:3

Right away we see that there are two individuals. Only one of the two is called God. God is the Father and the Lord is Jesus Christ. He is the Son of the Father. This is said to be the truth and also in love.

1 Jesus spoke these words, lifted up His eyes to heaven, and said: "Father, the hour has come. **Glorify Your Son, that Your Son also may glorify You,**

2 "as You have given Him authority over all flesh, that He should give eternal life to as many as You have given Him.

3 "And this is eternal life, **that they may know You, the only true God**, and **Jesus Christ whom You have sent.** John 17:1-3

Jesus Christ is the one asking that His Father Glorify Him so that He can Glorify His Father. So Jesus is the one whom God, the only true God, has sent. Clearly, it is the Father who has given Christ His authority. So, it's clear that the only true God is the Father, Jesus' Father, and Jesus is the one who was sent to us.

17 Jesus said to her, "Do not cling to Me, for I have not yet ascended to My Father; but go to My brethren and say to them, 'I am ascending **to My Father and your Father**, and **to My God and your God.**'" John 20:17

Again, we see that the God that we have is also the God that Jesus has. Here is an interesting verse that I have always read over without catching who God really is:

1 **The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him**, to shew unto his servants things which must shortly come to pass; and he sent and signified it by his angel unto his servant John: Revelation 1:1

It is God who gave Jesus His Revelation to show what must shortly come to pass. If Jesus was God also, this verse would not be worded in this way. But instead we find that it is God who gave Jesus his message of Revelation to us. So again, it's clear that there is only one God and He is the Father of all:

4 There is one body and one Spirit, just as you were called in one hope of your calling;

5 one Lord, one faith, one baptism;

6 one God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all.

7 But to each one of us **grace was given according to the measure of Christ's gift.** Ephesians 4:4-7

There is one God and Father of all things, but grace was given through Christ's gift. In all of these statements about God and His Son, The Father is over all things.

9 For they themselves declare concerning us what manner of entry we had to you, and how you turned to God from idols **to serve the living and true God,**

10 and **to wait for His Son from heaven, whom He raised from the dead, even Jesus who delivers us from the wrath to come.** 1 Thessalonians 1:9-10

God who is the living and true God, raised Jesus, His Son, from the dead. Nowhere is the Trinity mentioned. Only the Father who is the living and true God, and Jesus.

6 yet for us **there is one God, the Father, of whom are all things**, and we for Him; **and one Lord Jesus Christ, through whom are all things**, and through whom we live. 1 Corinthians 8:6

There is one God, the Father of all things, and one Lord Jesus Christ, through whom all things exist.

17 And suddenly a voice came from heaven, saying, **"This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased."** Matthew 3:17

The Father spoke from heaven at Christ's baptism saying: This is My beloved Son . . .

5 While he was still speaking, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them; and suddenly a voice came out of the cloud, saying, **"This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. Hear Him!"** Matthew 17:5

The Father this time spoke from a cloud saying: This is My beloved Son . . . We are seeing that Jesus is the Son of God over and over. While some say He is called the Son because He was born in Bethlehem through the Holy Spirit; The real truth, that the Bible teaches, is that Jesus was God's Son even before He became a man like us:

16 For **God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son**, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life. John 3:16

God loved us so much that He gave us His only begotten Son. In this verse we see that God had something to give us. We must especially notice that God had a Son to give. He had to have a Son in order to give Him to us.

So, Jesus was the only begotten Son of God before He was born on earth to become a son in a new sense as well.

14 And we have seen and testify that **the Father has sent the Son as Savior of the world.**

15 Whoever confesses that Jesus is the Son of God, God abides in him, and he in God.

16 And we have known and believed the love that God has for us. God is love, and he who abides in love abides in God, and God in him. 1 John 4:14-16

God the Father has sent the Son as Savior of the world. We should not lose this point! Whoever confesses that Jesus is the Son of God, it is God who lives in him, and he in God. We would be denying God by not confessing that Jesus is actually the Son of God!

2 in hope of eternal life which **God, who cannot lie**, promised before time began, Titus 1:2

All these quotes so far point out that God the Father is the one and only true God. We also see that He has a Son who has died for our sins. That Son is our gift from God Himself. They are actually identified as such.

Now, if God cannot lie, how would we consider all these statements? Especially when God Himself says: **“This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.”** Could God only be acting His part as is described by some trinitarians? Is acting, taking on a role that you are not, is it living a lie?

Here is a verse that describes the Father and His Son in the Old Testament:

4 Who has ascended into heaven, or descended? Who has gathered the wind in His fists? Who has bound the waters in a garment? Who has established all the ends of the earth? **What is His name, and what is His Son’s name**, If you know? Proverbs 30:4

It is a riddle concerning God and His Son, who created all things. Again there is no third person.

It is clear that it is the Father who gave His Son everything He has. This includes not only position but it also includes Christ’s attributes, such as His divinity.

The Son Receives His Inheritance directly from God

Let’s look at the Scripture that Mrs. White mentioned in her quote above. You will see that God does indeed set Him up to be like Himself.

The first thing we see is that the Son of God has been appointed heir of all things.

2 has in these last days spoken to us by **His Son, whom He has appointed heir of all things**, through whom also He made the worlds;

3 who being the brightness of His glory and the express image of His person, and upholding all things by the word of His power, when He had by Himself purged our sins, sat down at the right hand of the Majesty on high, Hebrews 1:2-3

So, the Son was the brightness of God, His Father’s glory. The Son was the express image of His Father’s person. . . . Human sons might be called: “a chip off the old block” or “He’s the splitting image” of his father. Sons often look very much like their father and we see the same type of language used in describing the Son of God’s attributes in relation to God His Father. So, it is clear that this is the Son of God. The Son is the

brightness of His Father's glory, and He is the express image of His Father's person. They look alike! It is obvious that this is a description of the Father and His Son. It is not part of a Trinity.

Now, in the Bible we never see that the Father is the express image of His Son. No, it's not there. It is described the other way around since Jesus is the Son of God. The Son is the express image of His Father's glory!

This Son, because He is the Son of God, has been appointed heir of all things. Here we see with even more specific language showing that Jesus is God's actual Son:

4 having become so much better than the angels, as **He has by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they.**

5 For to which of the angels did He ever say: "**You are My Son, Today I have begotten You**"? And again: "**I will be to Him a Father, And He shall be to Me a Son**"?

6 But when He again brings the firstborn into the world, He says: "**Let all the angels of God worship Him.**"
Hebrews 1:4-6

Because the Son of God is in reality, God's Son, He has the inheritance of being God. Thus He has a more excellent name than the angels in heaven. God says point blank: "**You are My Son, Today I have begotten You**".

Now, the greek word for "begotten" is not the word that is contested by theologians. Paul clearly said and meant "begotten" in a different way for this text.

Since Jesus is God's Son by inheritance, it should be logical that He would be in the form of God. He was actually composed out of the "stuff" of God!

So, the Son is God's Son! It is clear from these verses alone that this is really the Son of God. The Son is the brightness of His Father's glory, and He is the express image of His Father's person. They look alike! It is obvious that this is a description of the Father and His Son. It is not part of a Trinity.

It pleased The Father that The Son have Divinity and Authority

We will see that everything Jesus is and has, has been given to Him by His Father. Now, more specifically, we will now see indications that it pleased the Father that Jesus should be as He is. Thus The Father was pleased to allow Jesus to have the fulness of the Godhead, the fullness of His Divinity:

19 **For it pleased the Father that in Him all the fullness should dwell,** Colossians 1:19

9 **For in Him dwells all the fullness of the Godhead bodily;** Colossians 2:9.

In addition, It pleased God that Jesus should have life in Himself. Thus God granted that to be true.

26 "For as the Father has life in Himself, so **He has granted the Son to have life in Himself,** John 5:26

God has granted Jesus to have all authority in heaven and earth:

18 And Jesus came and spoke to them, saying, "**All authority has been given to Me in heaven and on earth.**"
Matthew 28:18

In all things, the Father delivered into Christ's hands:

27 **"All things have been delivered to Me by My Father**, and no one knows the Son except the Father. Nor does anyone know the Father except the Son, and the one to whom the Son wills to reveal Him. Matthew 11:27

Now, because Jesus humbled himself and died for us, God highly exalted Him:

8 And being found in fashion as a man, **he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.**

9 **Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name:**

10 **That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth;**

11 And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, **to the glory of God the Father.** Philippians 2:5-11

Because Jesus laid down His life, His Father loves Him more:

17 **"Therefore My Father loves Me**, because I lay down My life that I may take it again. John 10:17

God has also given Jesus a kingdom:

28 "But you [His disciples] are those who have continued with Me in My trials.

29 "And **I bestow upon you a kingdom, just as My Father bestowed one upon Me,**

30 "that you may eat and drink at My table in My kingdom, and sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel." Luke 22:28-30.

God calls His Son "O God" and He says that His throne will stand forever and ever! So, Jesus is called "God".

6 But to the Son He says: **"Your throne, O God, is forever and ever;** A scepter of righteousness is the scepter of Your Kingdom. Hebrews 1:8 (Quoting Psalm 45:6)

We see in the book of Revelation that there are two thrones that will be in heaven and later on the earth! It is not three thrones. Again, no Trinity is pictured in this kingdom.

21 "To him who overcomes **I will grant to sit with Me on My throne, as I also overcame and sat down with My Father on His throne.** Revelation 3:21.

In the world made new, the throne of God and of the Lamb will be the source of life!

1 And he showed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding from **the throne of God and of the Lamb.** Revelation 22:1.

There will be no curse and the throne of God and of the Lamb will be in that place.

3 And there shall be no more curse, but **the throne of God and of the Lamb** shall be in it, and His servants shall serve Him. Revelation 22:3.

There is no evidence at all that there is a third throne for the Holy Spirit. There are only two thrones in that place not three. The Holy Spirit is not even mentioned in these verses or anywhere else in the world made new!

22 But I saw no temple in it, for **the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are its temple.**

23 The city had no need of the sun or of the moon to shine in it, for **the glory of God illuminated it. The Lamb is its light.** Revelation 21:22-23

No need for a temple but we are assured that the presence of God and the Lamb are its temple. The light from God and the Lamb will illuminate the city.

When Jesus gains the kingdom, He then gives it back to His Father because His father is excepted when God said that all things would be placed under Jesus' feet. So, Jesus will always be a subject of His Father because the Father is over all things. Again, only the two of them are mentioned for the future:

24 **Then comes the end, when He delivers the kingdom to God the Father,** when He puts an end to all rule and all authority and power.

25 For **“He has put all things under His feet.”** But **when He says “all things are put under Him,”** it is evident that **He who put all things under Him is excepted.**

26 **Now when all things are made subject to Him, then the Son Himself will also be subject to Him who put all things under Him, that God may be all in all.** 1 Corinthians 15:24-28

Jesus will make us kings and Priests in His Father's kingdom, to His God and Father:

5 and from **Jesus Christ,** the faithful witness, the firstborn from the dead, and the ruler over the kings of the earth. To Him who loved us and washed us from our sins in His own blood,

6 and **has made us kings and priests to His God and Father,** to Him be glory and dominion forever and ever. Amen. Revelation 1:6

Now, it is obvious that the Father is over Jesus because He has always been and always will be over Jesus, because all things have come from Him who is God.

Now, in the following verse we see that the two will sit on the throne. Again, there is no third person mentioned.

12 “Then speak to him, saying, ‘Thus says the LORD of hosts, saying: **“Behold, the Man whose name is the BRANCH!** From His place He shall branch out, And He shall build the temple of the LORD;

13 Yes, He shall build the temple of the LORD. He shall bear the glory, And shall sit and rule on His throne; So He shall be a priest on His throne, And the counsel of peace shall be **between them both.**” Zechariah 6:12-13

Most everybody agrees that **“The BRANCH“** is the Son of God. God and His Son will sit and rule. Notice the last part of verse 13: **“And the counsel of peace shall be between them both“.** The original word for “both” is the Hebrew plural for exactly two; Not three or more, but specifically a pair! There is no room for a Trinity in this Scripture either. Only the Father and His Only begotten Son will rule and have a counsel of peace!

With all the quotes we have now seen, it makes sense that God would be the head of Christ:

3 But I want you to know that the head of every man is Christ, the head of woman is man, and **the head of Christ is God.** 1 Corinthians 11:3

The Father is greater than the Son.

29 “**My Father, who has given them to Me, is greater than all**; and no one is able to snatch them out of My Father’s hand.

30 I and My Father are one.” John 10:27-30

28 “You have heard Me say to you, ‘I am going away and coming back to you.’ If you loved Me, you would rejoice because I said, ‘I am going to the Father,’ for **My Father is greater than I**. John 14:28

And yet we find that Jesus is actually equal with God His Father:

5 Let this mind be in you which was also in **Christ Jesus**,

6 **who, being in the form of God, did not consider it robbery to be equal with God**, Philippians 2:5-6

Jesus came forth from His Father in the form of God. So Jesus is equal with His Father because of inheritance. He is the Son of the Father, so He will be like Him.

17 But Jesus answered them, “My Father has been working until now, and I have been working.”

18 Therefore the Jews sought all the more to kill Him, because He not only broke the Sabbath, but also said that **God was His Father, making Himself equal with God**. John 5:17-18.

Jesus is in the form of God and except for coming from His Father, thus coming later and having a beginning, He is equal with God His Father.

It reminds me of a man and wife. Both are equals, yet physically the man is stronger. So, it’s a good illustration to show how the Son can be equal and also weaker at the same time.

What is the Origin of the Son of God?

Now, let’s look more at the origin of the only begotten Son of God.

We have already seen this verse, It is a verse that describes the Father and His Son.

4 Who has ascended into heaven, or descended? Who has gathered the wind in His fists? Who has bound the waters in a garment? Who has established all the ends of the earth? **What is His name**, and **what is His Son’s name**, If you know? Proverbs 30:4

It is a riddle concerning God and His Son, who created all things. It is interesting that this verse links creation with the Father and at the same time, the Son’s name is mentioned. Because God has created all things through His Son Jesus Christ from the beginning of the ages.

9 and to make all see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the ages has been hidden **in God who created all things through Jesus Christ**; Ephesians 3:9

God created all things through His Son and (here’s the important part!): without Him, nothing was made that was made. So there was nothing that was created that God didn’t create through His Son. That would include all the worlds, suns, galaxies, and even the Sabbath! One other thing; It must include one thing more. The Son of God is not created like everything else. But rather, He came out of His Father.

3 **All things were made through Him [Jesus], and without Him nothing was made that was made**. John 1:3

Jesus is the firstborn because God created all things through Him. And all things were created for the Son and in Him all things consist.

So, if God created all things through Jesus and without the Son, there is nothing that was ever made; Then the Son cannot be created. He is the first-born and He is over all of creation. He is not part of the creation:

15 He is the image of the invisible God, **the firstborn over all creation.**

16 **For by Him all things were created that are in heaven and that are on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or principalities or powers. All things were created through Him and for Him.**

17 **And He is before all things, and in Him all things consist.** Colossians 1:15-17. NKJV

So, all things were created through the Son and all the things that were made, were made for Him as well.

The next three Scripture say the same thing, but the Son is now identified as the word of God.

6 **By the word of the LORD the heavens were made, And all the host of them by the breath of His mouth.** Psalm 33:6

3 By faith we understand that **the worlds were framed by the word of God**, so that the things which are seen were not made of things which are visible. Hebrews 11:3

5 For this they willfully forget: that **by the word of God** the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of water and in the water, 2 Peter 3:5

The Biblical Descriptions of the Son's Birth

To understand these next few verses better, we need to identify who Wisdom is?

24 but to those who are called, both Jews and Greeks, **Christ the power of God and the wisdom of God.**

30 But of Him you are in **Christ Jesus**, who became for us **wisdom from God**--and righteousness and sanctification and redemption-- 1 Corinthians 1:24,30.

So Wisdom is Christ. In this next description, Wisdom is described as being brought fourth. Jesus, the Son of God, was brought forth from the Father. Thus, Jesus was begotten from the Father. We also find that they experienced a special delight together in creating all things.

12 **"I, wisdom**, dwell with prudence, And find out knowledge and discretion.

22 **"The LORD possessed me at the beginning of His way, Before His works of old.**

23 **I have been established from everlasting, From the beginning**, before there was ever an earth.

24 When there were no depths **I was brought forth**, When there were no fountains abounding with water.

25 Before the mountains were settled, Before the hills, **I was brought forth**;

26 While as yet He had not made the earth or the fields, Or the primeval dust of the world.

27 When He prepared the heavens, **I was there**, When He drew a circle on the face of the deep,

28 When He established the clouds above, When He strengthened the fountains of the deep,

29 When He assigned to the sea its limit, So that the waters would not transgress His command, When He marked out the foundations of the earth,

30 Then **I was beside Him as a master craftsman; And I was daily His delight, Rejoicing always before Him**, (Then **I was by him, as one brought up with him**: and I was daily his delight, rejoicing always before him; Prov. 8:30 KJV)

31 Rejoicing in His inhabited world, And my delight was with the sons of men.

32 “Now therefore, listen to me, my children, For blessed are those who keep my ways. Proverbs 8:12, 22-32

Christ was brought forth from God. He came out of God. He was established from the beginning and God possessed Him at the beginning of His way before His works of old. Thus this is before the creation of all things. We see other interesting things as well. The Son’s special delight was in the sons of men and He calls them His children. He had an early love for us!

In Ephesians, we see that this team effort is called the fellowship of the mystery. It is something that is hidden in God the way all things were created. All we have is the description in Proverbs above.

9 and to make all see what is **the fellowship of the mystery**, which from the beginning of the ages has been hidden in God who created all things through Jesus Christ; Ephesians 3:9

Jesus is the Son of God by birth. Jesus came forth out of God! This is not a creative act but it is some kind of a birthing process because the Son of God came out of God Himself. So now Jesus lives in the bosom of His Father.

26 “In that day you will ask in My name, and I do not say to you that I shall pray the Father for you;

27 “for the Father Himself loves you, because you have loved Me, **and have believed that I came forth from God.**

28 “**I came forth from the Father and have come into the world.** Again, I leave the world and go to the Father.” John 16:26-28

The phrase “came forth” is translated from the Greek word: ἐξέρχομαι (“**exerchomai**“ Strongs # 1831) which means to “issued forth” or to have “issued from”. Jesus issued forth from the Father. In the next verse, “proceeded forth” also comes from the same Greek word.

The next Scripture is very interesting. In verse 41, the leaders decided to push their point by saying that they were not illegitimate like Jesus was. Thus they were saying Jesus was Illegitimate!

In response, Jesus expanded His message by telling them where He actually came from. So, Jesus told them that He was not illegitimate at all. He proceeded forth from God Himself! So, Christ told them: If God were their father, they would love Him because He came out of the Father, and He came from God, who sent Him into the world.

Thus Jesus was speaking very plainly, telling them that He originally came forth out of the Father. Yet it was as if they had not heard Him:

42 Jesus said to them, “If God were your Father, you would love Me, for **I proceeded forth and came from God; nor have I come of Myself, but He sent Me.**

43 “**Why do you not understand My speech? Because you are not able to listen to My word.**

44 “**You are of your father the devil, and the desires of your father you want to do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own resources, for he is a liar and the father of it.**

45 “**But because I tell the truth**, you do not believe Me.

46 “**Which of you convicts Me of sin? And if I tell the truth**, why do you not believe Me?

47 “He who is of God hears God’s words; therefore you do not hear, because you are not of God. “John 8:42-47

Jesus said He came forth from God when He was accused of being illegitimate. So it is clear that Jesus was speaking of His original birth from the Creator. Jesus is not illegitimate He proceeded forth out of God Himself!

In this and the previous Scripture ([John 16:26-28](#)) we find that Jesus spoke of two different events. 1) He proceeded forth or He came forth from God and, 2) He came into the world (God sent Him).

The text is not just a fancy way to describe His coming to the earth twice as some try to push. But when they do, they ignore the meaning of the word meaning to “[issued forth](#)”. But rather, Jesus was saying that He proceeded forth from God and He also came from God who sent Him to the earth. The context of the story confirms that very point!

7 “Now they have known that all things which You have given Me are from You.

8 “For I have given to them the words which You have given Me; and they have received them, and have known surely that [I came forth from You; and they have believed that You sent Me.](#) [John 17:7-8](#)

Jesus is the only begotten Son of God What does “begotten” Mean?

The Father had a Son to give us so we could be saved. It was His only begotten Son.

16 “For [God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son](#), that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life. [John 3:16](#)

But did God actually give us His only begotten Son, the Son of His Bosom, the Son that came out of God? Or did God just give us a unique Son that is not even begotten by Him and is just said to be His Son?

Did Abraham Have One Son or Two Sons?

The controversy has been raised because of [Hebrews 11:17](#).

17 By faith Abraham, when he was tested, offered up Isaac, and he who had received the promises offered up [his only begotten son](#), [Hebrews 11:17](#)

In [Hebrews](#), Abraham is said to have offered up Isaac, his only begotten son. However some oppose this idea by asking: “Did Abraham only have one son or did he really have two sons: Isaac and Ishmael?”

If Abraham had two sons then Isaac cannot be Abraham’s only begotten son. Isaac must only be Abraham’s unique son since Issac had a “half-brother”.

The answer to this question is very simple and is found in the very next chapter of [Hebrews](#):

7 If you endure chastening, God deals with you as with sons; for what son is there whom a father does not chasten?

8 But if you are without chastening, of which all have become partakers, then you are [illegitimate](#) and not [sons](#). [Hebrews 12:7-8](#)

In our walk with God we know that we are true sons of God when God deals with us to chasten us. Otherwise, we would wonder if we ourselves were really illegitimate and not a son of God.

This same question also relates to Ishmael. Isaac was the cherished son of Abraham, but was Ishmael also a son of Abraham or was he illegitimate? As it turns out, Ishmael was really illegitimate and was even banished from the home. So, following the logic of Hebrews 12:8, Ishmael is illegitimate and not Abraham's son.

In the next section, we will also see that God never calls Ishmael Abraham's son.

Isaac the Only Son of Abraham

Abraham's situation is the key since he is used in this argument to say that Jesus is not the only begotten Son of God. God promised Abraham a son but Abraham gave in to his wife when they thought the time was passing from them. So thinking they would help God, they used Hagar to obtain a son.

But now, Abraham had this problem. Sarah, his real wife, was now telling him to get rid of the bondswoman and her son.

10 Therefore she [Sarah] said to Abraham, **“Cast out this bondswoman and her son; for the son of this bondswoman shall not be heir with my son, namely with Isaac.”**

11 And the matter was very displeasing in Abraham's sight because of his son.

12 But God said to Abraham, **“Do not let it be displeasing in your sight because of the lad or because of your bondswoman. Whatever Sarah has said to you, listen to her voice; for in Isaac your seed shall be called.**

13 **“Yet I will also make a nation of the son of the bondswoman, because he is your seed.”** Genesis 21:10-13

Look at verses 12 and 13. God Himself does not call Hagar Abraham's wife nor does He call Ishmael Abraham's son. Instead, He calls Hagar “your bondswoman” and He calls the boy “the son of the bondswoman”! So, there is no indication from God that the boy is actually part of Abraham's family; Rather, he is an outcast, he is clearly illegitimate from God's perspective.

What is really amazing to realize is that God actually went out of his way to describe Hagar as “your bondswoman” and the boy as “the son of the bondswoman” and not as Abraham's son! He could have easily called the boy his son. But God did not do that. God only indicated that the lad was “Abraham's seed”.

Isaac is Abraham's only begotten son because he was the only son from his legitimate wife within the confines of legitimate marriage according to the Law of God. So it was Isaac who was to be the heir of all that Abraham had, not Ishmael. Even though Ishmael was Abraham's seed, he was illegitimate and not counted as a son of Abraham by God. So he was forced to leave Abraham's camp with his mother. His mother was only a bondswoman, not Abraham's one and only wife.

If Ishmael was indeed to be counted as a son, he would then be heir of all things since he was born before Isaac. However, he is not even counted as being part of the family and is forced to leave. So, Isaac is the first born and he receives the birthright.

Isaac was also used to test Abraham's love for God over his most prized possession, that of his only begotten son:

2 Then He said, **“Take now your son, your only son Isaac, whom you love, and go to the land of Moriah, and offer him there as a burnt offering on one of the mountains of which I shall tell you.”** Genesis 22:2

Since God did not consider Ishmael to be Abraham's son it makes sense that God would now call Isaac Abraham's only son. Not only is Isaac the first born, he is the only son born in the family. Abraham has no other son! His wife only had one boy.

So, God Himself calls Isaac, Abraham's only son!

Hagar was not counted as Abraham's wife at all but only Abraham's bondwoman; And Ishmael was also not even counted as a son of Abraham and was actually forced to leave the family with his mother. What father would ever send his son and wife out into the wilderness possibly never to see them again? It was also an action that God said should happen:

12 But God said to Abraham, **“Do not let it be displeasing in your sight because of the lad or because of your bondwoman. Whatever Sarah has said to you, listen to her voice; for in Isaac your seed shall be called.**

13 **“Yet I will also make a nation of the son of the bondwoman, because he is your seed.”** Genesis 21:12-13

It was to keep the integrity and peace of his actual family that Ishmael had to go. Ishmael obviously was not his son nor was he a part of the family so he did not receive the birthright that would normally be given to the first born son. So since God Himself called Isaac as Abraham's only son, Isaac's rightful position in the family was that of the only begotten son of Abraham and the first born.

God Recognized Isaac as Abraham's Only Son so Paul Chose to Follow His Pronouncement

While the language that Moses used in Genesis indicates that Hagar was Abraham's second wife and that Ishmael was Abraham's other son. (Here are some examples)

3 Then **Sarai, Abram's wife**, took **Hagar** her maid, the Egyptian, and gave her to her husband Abram **to be his wife**, after Abram had dwelt ten years in the land of Canaan. Genesis 16:3

9 And his [Abraham] **sons Isaac and Ishmael** buried him in the cave of Machpelah, which is before Mamre, in the field of Ephron the son of Zohar the Hittite, Genesis 25:9

12 Now this is the genealogy of **Ishmael, Abraham's son**, whom **Hagar** the Egyptian, Sarah's maidservant, bore to Abraham. Genesis 25:12

However, God Himself never recognized either Hagar nor Ishmael as being part of the Abraham's family.

12 But God said to Abraham, **“Do not let it be displeasing in your sight because of the lad or because of your bondwoman. Whatever Sarah has said to you, listen to her voice; for in Isaac your seed shall be called.**

13 **“Yet I will also make a nation of the son of the bondwoman, because he is your seed.”** Genesis 21:12-13

In addition to calling Ishmael “the son of the bondwoman”, God later referred to Isaac as Abraham's only son:

2 Then He said, **“Take now your son, your only son Isaac**, whom you love, and go to the land of Moriah, and offer him there as a burnt offering on one of the mountains of which I shall tell you.” Genesis 22:2

It is clear that God Himself recognized Isaac as being Abraham's only son. We also see that Paul chose to describe Isaac in the same way that God did. He did this by calling Isaac Abraham's only begotten son:

17 By faith Abraham, when he was tested, offered up Isaac, and he who had received the promises offered up **his only begotten son**, Hebrews 11:17

So, Paul means what he is saying. Paul describes Isaac as being Abraham's only begotten son because God Himself had pronounced the same thing long before. Ishmael was only an illegitimate seed and not a son. Having grown up as a Jew, Paul wasn't about to call Ishmael a son of Abraham knowing all these things. I am sure he was familiar with the issues.

This "unique" Argument is Only Made to support the Trinity Doctrine

The example of Abraham, Isaac, and Ishmael is always brought up as the basis for the argument that Jesus cannot be the only-begotten Son of God. However, we have seen that God Himself never calls Ishmael Abraham's son. Instead, He calls Ishmael the son of the bondwoman but when God talks to Abraham, He calls Isaac Abraham's only son (Genesis 22:2).

The only reason for having the argument, that "**only-begotten**" means "**unique**" in the case of Jesus, is this: Theologians want to do away with the understanding that Jesus actually is the Son of God, that He came out of His Father, because it goes against the doctrine of the Trinity.

Since they argue that Isaac was not Abraham's only son, they then urge that Jesus cannot be God's only Son because the same Greek word is used to describe both Jesus and Isaac.

There is no reason to resort to changing an obvious meaning of a word. The most direct and obvious meaning of "**monogene**" is **ONLY-generated, only-begotten, Only-born, the sole or only begotten child**, as we discussed earlier. It does not mean "unique" at all. But it means "**mono**" = **only** and "**gene**" = **generated or begotten**.

There are also other examples of the "only-begotten" word that is translated correctly and everyone agrees with the translation:

And when He came near the gate of the city, behold, a dead man was being carried out, **the only son** of his mother; and she was a widow. And a large crowd from the city was with her. Luke 7:12

for he had **an only daughter** about twelve years of age, and she was dying. But as He went, the multitudes thronged Him. Luke 8:42

Suddenly a man from the multitude cried out, saying, "Teacher, I implore You, look on my son, for he is **my only child**". Luke 9:38

Since these examples describe normal family and human existence; The begotten aspect of how the child came to be is automatically assumed even by the reader. The "begotten" meaning is an actual part of the sentence whether the word is present or not. But in the case of Jesus, the begotten aspect had to be spelled out to make it clear how Jesus began, according to the actual meaning of the word.

In each of these three examples, it is an only-begotten son, daughter, or child. The argument is never made by these same theologians that it actually should be translated as a unique son, daughter, or child. Only when the word is used in connection with Jesus do they start to object!

So, the argument that Isaac is only a unique son, is definitely not strong enough to warrant a change in our understanding of a basic Greek word. The absurdity of this argument is especially obvious when we consider that even God considered Isaac to be Abraham's only son and He pronounced him as such. Paul was only saying what God had said long before!

The most obvious, direct, and simple meaning of the Greek text, using the actual meaning of the words, tells us that Jesus is indeed the only begotten Son of God! It is a very simple translation and there is an obvious meaning to the word! There is no mystery about it.

Their presupposition or assumption that the Trinity doctrine is correct has forced them to make this poor argument. It is only because of the Trinity doctrine that this debate is even tried as an argument. They simply do not want Jesus to be the only-begotten Son of God because He can not actually be begotten within the Trinity concept.

2. The Bible clearly teaches the truth about the Spirit of the Father and Son - The Holy Spirit

Is the Holy Spirit the third person of the Trinity? Or is the Holy Spirit actually the Spirit of God the Father which was also given to His Son, the presence of God Himself through His own Spirit? Lets look at the Bible to see if we can determine which is true.

A note concerning highlighted Biblical text.
Red refers to God the Father and
Blue refers to Jesus the Son of God.

The Father and the Son but NOT the Holy Spirit

All throughout the Bible, God the Father and Jesus are always spoken of as being two separate and different individuals. Let's start with God the Father:

6 **one God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all.** Ephesians 4:6

The Father is identified as God. He is the Father of all. He is above everything and He is in us all! In the next verse we see that there are two individuals who took part in the creation process:

6 yet for us there is **one God, the Father**, of whom are all things, and we for Him; and **one Lord Jesus Christ**, through whom are all things, and through whom we live. 1 Corinthians 8:6

Once again we see that there is one God, that is the Father. So Jesus is not declared to be God. Jesus is separate from God the Father. We also see that both the Father and Jesus created everything, but it was the Father who created through Jesus.

3 that which we have seen and heard we declare to you, that you also may have fellowship with us; and truly **our fellowship is with the Father and with His Son Jesus Christ.** 1 John 1:3

John wanted to have fellowship with those he was writing to. But in addition, he said that truly, our fellowship is really with the Father and with His Son Jesus Christ. So, we can see that Jesus is not only separate from the Father but that He is the Son. Jesus is the Son of God. These are the two that we have fellowship with.

At this point it is interesting to note that the Holy Spirit is not included in with those who created everything nor is the Holy Spirit included as one that we are to have fellowship.

5 For **there is one God and one Mediator between God and men, the Man Christ Jesus,** 1 Timothy 2:5

We have seen that Jesus is the Son of God. Now we find that there is only one God and that Jesus is the only Mediator between God and man. This is really interesting! We have always been told that the Holy Spirit is a mediator. But now in Timothy we see that there is only one mediator which is Jesus. There is no other mediator!

Now, let's look in the book of Revelation to see how God and His Son, the Lamb of God, are worshipped in Heaven:

12 saying with a loud voice: **“Worthy is the Lamb who was slain To receive power and riches and wisdom, And strength and honor and glory and blessing!”**

13 And every creature which is in heaven and on the earth and under the earth and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, I heard saying: **“Blessing and honor and glory and power Be to Him who sits on the throne, And to the Lamb, forever and ever!”**

14 Then **the four living creatures said, “Amen!” And the twenty-four elders fell down and worshiped Him who lives forever and ever.** Revelation 5:8-14.

Because the Lamb is found worthy, they bring praise and honor to the Lamb. But it is the one who sits on the throne that they worshiped. We can see the difference even in Heaven, The Father who sits on the throne of God is God and He is worshipped above all others. Jesus is the Son of God and who also is blessed and honored with glory and Power. All the while here is no mention of the Holy Spirit. No one seems to be worshipping the Holy Spirit!

9 After these things I looked, and behold, a great multitude which no one could number, of all nations, tribes, peoples, and tongues, standing **before the throne and before the Lamb**, clothed with white robes, with palm branches in their hands,

10 and crying out with a loud voice, saying, **“Salvation belongs to our God who sits on the throne, and to the Lamb!“**

11 All the angels stood around the throne and the elders and the four living creatures, and **fell on their faces before the throne and worshiped God,**

12 saying: **“Amen! Blessing and glory and wisdom, Thanksgiving and honor and power and might, Be to our God forever and ever. Amen.“** Revelation 7:9-12.

A great multitude stands before the throne and before the Lamb and they cry out that salvation belongs to our God who sits on the throne and to the Lamb.

Now if there were a third person, the Holy Spirit, would He not have a part to play in our salvation? Doesn't the Holy Spirit have a very definite role to play in our salvation? A separate third divine individual is not even mentioned at all. Only God and the Lamb are mentioned.

Then, all in heaven fall down and worship God who is on the throne. He is the one who receives the ultimate worship.

Now let's look at a different point in time and place. We will see who will be found on the throne in the new earth, more specifically, in the New Jerusalem:

1 And he showed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding from **the throne of God and of the Lamb.**

2 In the middle of its street, and on either side of the river, was the tree of life, which bore twelve fruits, each tree yielding its fruit every month. The leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

3 And there shall be no more curse, but **the throne of God and of the Lamb** shall be in it, and His servants shall serve Him. Revelation 22:1-3

We see that God the Father and the Lamb will be present. In the new world, the river of life will come out of the throne of God and of the Lamb. There will be no more curse in the land but the throne of God and of the Lamb will be in it.

In this Scripture, we do not see the Holy Spirit even mentioned. There is no separate individual that is named the Holy Spirit in the New world.

The Spirit of God is actually the Spirit of the Father

Let's look closely at this next verse, We will now start to see why no individual called the Holy Spirit is even mentioned in Heaven or in the New world:

3 And **He who sat there** was like a jasper and a sardius stone in appearance; and there was a rainbow around the throne, in appearance like an emerald.

4 Around the throne were twenty-four thrones, and on the thrones I saw twenty-four elders sitting, clothed in white robes; and they had crowns of gold on their heads.

5 And from the throne proceeded lightnings, thunderings, and voices. **Seven lamps of fire** were burning before the throne, which are **the seven Spirits of God**. Revelation 3:3-5

This is very different. I have never heard of anyone talking about the seven Spirits of God. Yet, we have this description of God sitting on His throne. And associated with God on the throne are seven lamps of fire which are called the seven Spirits of God. It seems to be an attribute of God Himself and I believe these seven Spirits of God are the Holy Spirit. To help confirm that let's look at the next verse:

6 And I looked, and behold, in the midst of the throne and of the four living creatures, and in the midst of the elders, stood a **Lamb as though it had been slain**, having seven horns and **seven eyes**, which are **the seven Spirits of God sent out into all the earth**. Revelation 5:6

In this description of the Lamb who is Jesus. We see that Jesus is pictured as having seven eyes which are also called the seven Spirits of God. In addition these spirits are said to go into all the earth. I find it very interesting that these Spirits are pictured as being seven eyes. Apparently they allow Jesus to see things on the earth. The seven Spirits are definitely an attribute of the Lamb. Not an individual separate from that of the Father and Jesus. I believe that this is the Holy Spirit that Jesus gives us. And I believe we will see this in the selections of Scripture below.

To understand who or what the Holy Spirit is, let's start with God the Father since all things come from Him:

24 "**God is Spirit**, and those who worship Him must worship in spirit and truth." John 4:24

From many places in the Bible we see that the Father has a body. Now we see that God Himself is Spirit. He has a Spirit, the Spirit of God, and through His Spirit he can be present everywhere at the same time.

11 Do not cast me away from **Your presence**, And do not take **Your Holy Spirit** from me. Psalm 51:11

In this verse, God's presence is what is desired. Now if God is omnipresent through His Spirit, it certainly makes sense that His presence can be with us. In this verse the Presence of God is associated with what is called the Holy Spirit.

29 "And **He who sent Me is with Me**. **The Father has not left Me alone**, for I always do those things that please Him." John 8:29

The Father has also sent His presence along with His Son when He came to the earth. God did not leave Jesus by Himself.

Jesus Gives us the Helper from the Father, which is the Holy Spirit

Now that Jesus has risen and gone to the Father, He has delivered on His promise to give us a special Helper or Comforter. This gift is greater than what was available to us before:

26 “But when **the Helper** comes, whom **I shall send to you from the Father**, **the Spirit of truth who proceeds from the Father**, He will testify of Me. John 15:26

The gift we receive proceeds from the Father but it is Jesus who actually gives us the Spirit. Because Jesus gives us the Spirit, the Spirit specifically testifies concerning Jesus.

Jesus gives us the Holy Spirit which is the Helper or the Spirit of truth:

32 “**This Jesus God has raised up**, of which we are all witnesses.

33 “Therefore being exalted to the right hand of God, and **having received from the Father the promise of the Holy Spirit**, **He poured out this which you now see and hear**. Acts 2:32-33

So, Jesus, whom God has raised up from the dead, has received the promise of the Holy Spirit from His Father so that He can pour it out on us.

4 But when **the kindness and the love of God our Savior toward man appeared**,

5 not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to His mercy **He saved us, through the washing of regeneration and renewing of the Holy Spirit**,

6 **whom He poured out on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Savior**, Titus 3:4-6

The Holy Spirit is the kindness and the love that appears to us which regenerates and renews us.

Jesus Gives us Himself, through His Spirit that is Received from the Father

The next verse shows that it is actually Jesus Himself that dwells in us:

14 For this reason I bow my knees to **the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ**,

15 from whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named,

16 that He would grant you, according to the riches of His glory, to be strengthened with might **through His Spirit** in the inner man,

17 **that Christ may dwell in your hearts through faith**; that you, being rooted and grounded in love, Ephesians 3:14-17

Now we have every reason to worship God the Father for granting us the richness of His glory. He thus allows us to be strengthened through His Spirit in a way that allows Jesus to dwell in our hearts.

So, How can we put the two following ideas together:

1. Initially we saw that Jesus gave us the gift that comes from the Father. So, Jesus receives the gift Himself then He gives it to us, which is the gift of God’s Holy Spirit that testifies of Jesus.
2. Now we see that it is Jesus Himself that dwells in our hearts. So, the Spirit of God going through Jesus somehow allows Jesus to dwell in our hearts as well.

The answer is found in the next verse:

45 And so it is written, “The first man Adam became a living being.” **The last Adam [Christ] became a life-giving spirit.** 1 Corinthians 15:45

So Jesus has now become a life-giving spirit, the Spirit of truth. He now has been given the Holy Spirit which changes Him. This change now makes Jesus a life-giving spirit.

In the next verse we see that God the Father has actually sent the Spirit of Christ into the world and into our hearts:

6 And because you are sons, **God has sent forth the Spirit of His Son into your hearts**, crying out, “Abba, Father!” Galatians 4:6

More is happening than just having Jesus receive the Holy Spirit from God so He can give it to us. The thing that has happened is that Jesus Himself has become a life-giving spirit. This is how God the Father is able to send the Spirit of His Son into our hearts!

This relates to what we have already seen in Revelation 5:

6 And I looked, and behold, in the midst of the throne and of the four living creatures, and in the midst of the elders, stood **a Lamb as though it had been slain**, having seven horns and **seven eyes**, which are **the seven Spirits of God sent out into all the earth.** Revelation 5:6

So, Jesus Himself now has seven eyes which are sent out into all the earth. We now find that His presence can actually be with us. Jesus actually lives in us by the Spirit which is now His Spirit:

24 All who obey his commandments abide in him, **and he abides in them.** And by this we know that **he abides in us, by the Spirit that he has given us.** 1 John 3:24 NRSV

Jesus lives in us by the Spirit that He has given us. He actually abides in us!

This explains how Jesus can say that He will be with us always even till the end of the world:

20 . . . “and lo, **I [Jesus] am with you always, even to the end of the world.**” Amen. Matthew 28:20 part

If we open the door, Jesus will be with us always even till the end of the world:

20 “Behold, I stand at the door and knock. If anyone hears My voice and opens the door, **I will come in to him and dine with him, and he with Me.**

21 “To him who overcomes I will grant to sit with Me on My throne, as I also overcame and sat down with My Father on His throne.

22 “He who has an ear, **let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.**”” Revelation 3:20-22

When Jesus lives in us, we can then live by faith:

20 “I have been crucified with Christ; it is no longer I who live, **but Christ lives in me**; and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave Himself for me. Galatians 2:20

We are to even test ourselves to see if Jesus is in us:

5 Examine yourselves as to whether you are in the faith. Test yourselves. Do you not know yourselves, **that Jesus Christ is in you?** --unless indeed you are disqualified. 1 Corinthians 13:5

Jesus died and then rose that He might fill all things:

10 He who descended [into the grave] is also the One who ascended far above all the heavens, **that He might fill all things**. Ephesians 4:10

This is very important! Jesus can now fill all things because He ascended to God in Heaven. Now it is the Spirit of Jesus Christ which fills all things.

19 For I know that this will turn out for my deliverance through your prayer and the supply of **the Spirit of Jesus Christ**, Philippians 1:19

It is the Spirit of Jesus Christ and prayer that gives us deliverance.

3 Let us know, Let us pursue the knowledge of the LORD. His going forth is established as the morning; **He will come to us like the rain, Like the latter and former rain to the earth**. Hosea 6:3

Jesus comes to us with His Spirit like the rain, the early and latter rain. We are all looking for the latter rain toward the time of the end! That is the Spirit of Christ in us that we may do the works of Christ!

9 But you are not in the flesh but in the Spirit, if indeed **the Spirit of God dwells in you**. Now if anyone does not have **the Spirit of Christ**, he is not His.

10 And **if Christ is in you**, the body is dead because of sin, but the Spirit is life because of righteousness. Romans 8:9-10

You will notice in a few of these texts that the Spirit of God and the Spirit of Christ are used interchangeably. I want the Spirit of God the Father to dwell in me, that is the Spirit of Christ because they share the same Spirit.

17 Now **the Lord is the Spirit**; and where **the Spirit of the Lord** is, there is liberty. 2 Corinthians 3:17

So Jesus our Lord is the Spirit and where His Spirit is, there is liberty.

Jesus is Glorified so He can give us His Spirit

We will now take an even closer look at how Jesus is able to receive the Holy Spirit which enables Him to give us His own Spirit, The Spirit of Christ:

7 “Nevertheless I tell you the truth. It is to your advantage that I go away; for if I do not go away, **the Helper** will not come to you; **but if I depart, I will send Him to you**. John 16:7

The only way Jesus’ disciples could receive the Helper was if Jesus left them. It is only when Jesus departs that He will send the Helper or comforter to them.

39 But this He spoke concerning **the Spirit**, whom those believing **in Him would receive**; for **the Holy Spirit was not yet given, because Jesus was not yet glorified**. John 7:39

This verse has a new element. Jesus could not give His Spirit to us because He was not yet glorified. Only when He is glorified is He able to become a life-giving spirit. Now, today, He is able to send His disciples and His church the presence of His own Spirit.

Just before Jesus was to die He prayed this request to His Father:

- 1 Jesus spoke these words, lifted up His eyes to heaven, and said: “**Father**, the hour has come. **Glorify Your Son**, that **Your Son** also may **glorify You**,
- 2 “as **You have given Him authority over all flesh**, that He should give eternal life to as many as You have given Him.
- 3 “**And this is eternal life, that they may know You, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom You have sent**.
- 4 “I have glorified You on the earth. I have finished the work which You have given Me to do.
- 5 “And now, **O Father, glorify Me together with Yourself, with the glory which I had with You before the world was**. John 17:1-5

In Jesus’ prayer, He identifies His Father as being the only true God! Jesus is the one who God has sent to the earth. But Jesus has one main request that He is asking His Father. He is asking that He may be glorified with Him as He was glorified before He came into the world!

Jesus has a reason for His request of glorification. we find it in the second verse above. He is asking to be glorified so that He can give eternal life to God’s people on earth. Look at the next selection for confirmation:

- 22 “**And the glory which You gave Me I have given them**, that they may be one just as We are one:
- 23 “**I in them, and You in Me; that they may be made perfect in one**, and that the world may know that You have sent Me, and have loved them as You have loved Me.
- 24 “Father, I desire that **they also whom You gave Me may be with Me where I am**, that they may behold My glory which You have given Me; for You loved Me before the foundation of the world. John 17:22-24

Jesus is very specifically asking for the ability to take God’s people back to heaven so they can be together to see His glory when He will be in Heaven (verse 24).

Now Jesus is asking to receive the Holy Spirit so He can do specific kinds of things:

1. Jesus will receive the Spirit of God which He had before with God.
2. Jesus will receive the glory which He had with the Father before the world was.
3. Now Jesus can not only be with His disciples but He can be **in** His disciples as well.
4. So, Jesus will be in us just as the Father is in His Son!

This was done so that we may be made perfect in one with God, and that the world may know that the Father has sent His Son, and that God has loved us in the same way He has loved His Son.

1. The disciples are allowed to behold Christ’ glory.
2. In addition, Jesus empowered His disciples to do mighty works.

The answer to this prayer was the out-pouring of the Holy Spirit:

- 49 “**Behold, I send the Promise of My Father upon you**; but tarry in the city of Jerusalem **until you are endued with power from on high**.” Luke 24:49

Ten days after Jesus ascended to Heaven Jesus was glorified by His Father with the glory that He had with the Father before the world was. In being glorified, He received the promise of the Holy Spirit so that the Spirit of the Father is now also the Spirit of the Son, thus giving Him omnipotence, omniscience, and omnipresence. This is how Jesus became a life-giving Spirit that He might fill all things.

4 There is one body and **one Spirit**, just as you were called in one hope of your calling;

5 **one Lord**, one faith, one baptism;

6 **one God and Father of all, who is above all**, and through all, and in you all. Ephesians 4:4-6

There are not two spirits but only one Spirit. So the Holy Spirit is now the spirit of both the Father and the Son.

Now John 14 is an interesting chapter. Many think it helps confirm the idea that “another Helper” is actually someone else, somebody other than Jesus Christ.

But we will see that John 14 actually confirms the opposite, that the Holy Spirit is now the spirit of both the Father and the Son.

16 “And I will pray the Father, and He will give you **another Helper**, that He may abide with you forever--
John 14:16

It does sound like Jesus is talking about someone else because He speaks of the Helper in “third person”. However, there are many other times where Jesus speaks about Himself while He uses the “third person”.

In addition, if we continue reading to verse 18, we get the completely opposite position that we get by just reading verse 16:

16 “And I will pray the Father, and He will give you **another Helper**, that He may abide with you forever--
17 “the Spirit of truth, whom **the world cannot receive, because it neither sees Him nor knows Him; but you know Him, for He dwells with you and will be in you.**
18 “**I will not leave you orphans; I will come to you.** John 14:16-18

The Helper is called the Spirit of truth. Jesus says that the world cannot receive Him nor see Him nor know Him. But then Jesus said to His disciples that they know Him for He dwells with them and will be in them.

That is a pretty good hint right there because it is Jesus Himself who lived with them and He also had promised to be in them in the future. However, Jesus then comes right out and says it: “I will not leave you orphans because I will come to you”.

So, Jesus said that another helper (or comforter) is coming. Then He turns around and tells them that He Himself will be with them.

Notice in verse 17 that Jesus said to His disciples that the world cannot receive the spirit of truth, but you can because you know Him. In fact, He already dwells with you.

So of course the disciples knew Jesus having lived with Him. Now He promises that He will not only come to them but He will also be in them. This idea matches with what Jesus had said earlier:

4 “**Abide in Me, and I in you.** As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, unless it abides in the vine, neither can

you, unless **you abide in Me**. John 15:4

So, Jesus is speaking of His living in us! At Pentecost, the promise came and Peter told the curious people that Jesus, who was now sitting at the right hand of God, had just received from the Father the promise of the Holy Spirit:

33 “Therefore being exalted to the right hand of God, and **having received from the Father the promise of the Holy Spirit, He poured out this which you now see and hear**. Acts 2:33

Now if we continue John 14 with what Jesus said about the helper, we will find out who this helper is:

18 “**I will not leave you orphans; I will come to you**.

19 “A little while longer and **the world will see Me no more, but you will see Me**. Because I live, you will live also.

20 “At that day you will know that I am in My Father, and you in Me, and I in you.

21 “He who has My commandments and keeps them, it is he who loves Me. **And he who loves Me will be loved by My Father, and I will love him and manifest Myself to him.**” John 14:18-21

We saw already that Jesus told them directly that He Himself will come to them. “I will not leave you orphans because I will come to you”

Then He said that pretty soon the world will not see me but you will see me. because Jesus will love them and manifest Himself to His disciples.

22 Judas (not Iscariot) said to Him, “Lord, how is it that **You will manifest Yourself to us, and not to the world?**” John 14:22

Judas got it right! He understood that Jesus would manifest Himself to them but he still had a question: So he asked how Jesus would manifest to us but not the world? It is easy to see that Judas knew that Jesus was really taking about Himself being with them.

Then Jesus told how both He and the Father would be with them. Pay special attention to this:

23 Jesus answered and said to him, “If anyone loves Me, he will keep My word; and **My Father will love him, and We will come to him and make Our home with him**. John 14:23

So, not only will Jesus love us and manifest Himself to us but the Father will also love us and both God who is the Father and the Son of God who is Jesus, they will both come and make their home in us.

This is confirmed in other verses:

3 that which we have seen and heard we declare to you, that you also may have fellowship with us; and truly **our fellowship is with the Father and with His Son Jesus Christ**. 1 John 1:3

Our fellowship is with both the Father and with His Son Jesus Christ.

23 Whoever denies **the Son** does not have **the Father** either; he who acknowledges **the Son** has **the Father** also.

24 Therefore let that abide in you which you heard from the beginning. If what you heard from the beginning abides in you, you also will abide in **the Son** and in **the Father**. 1 John 2:23-24

So indeed, if we have the Son, we also have the Father but if we deny the Son we do not have the Father either. We will abide in both the Son and in the Father.

It is very important to see that the Bible does not say that we abide in the Holy Spirit or that we fellowship with the Spirit. We Fellowship with the Father and Son and we abide in the Father and Son because they share the same spirit. So they both come to make Their home with us.

Nowhere does the Bible speak of the Holy Spirit as being part of a Trinity or even as a separate individual. The Holy Spirit is the Spirit of God and the Spirit of the Son together.

25 “O righteous Father! The world has not known You, but I have known You; and these have known that You sent Me.

26 “And I have declared to them Your name, and will declare it, that **the love with which You loved Me may be in them**, and **I in them**.” John 17:25-26

We now have both the Father and the Son in us!

We can now see that the Bible very specifically spells out what the Holy Spirit actually is, that it is the Spirit of the Father, given to the Son, who shares it with us. So, the Holy Spirit is not some third part of a Trinity. It is the Spirit of God, the Spirit of Jesus, the Spirit of Truth!

The Bible actually explains where the Holy Spirit actually comes from. There is one spirit that comes from the Father, yet is now shared with His Son as well. Thus they communicate to us through the Spirit of God and Christ.

4 There is one body and **one Spirit**, just as you were called in one hope of your calling;

5 **one Lord**, one faith, one baptism;

6 **one God and Father of all, who is above all**, and through all, and in you all. Ephesians 4:4-6

There is one Spirit and through that Spirit, the Spirit of God, both the one Lord, and the one God, who is the Father of all, can both be with us!

It is clear that the Trinity is not being taught by these verses. Instead, a completely different point is being taught about God and the Son. People are working so hard to see the Trinity in the Bible that they completely miss the truth about God within its very pages!

The Holy Spirit is clearly not some third part of the Trinity, but it is God’s Spirit that is shared by God and His Son. Now they are sharing the Spirit with us.

3. Bible quotes used by some to teach the Trinity teaching.

Trinity interpretations are given to various Scripture. However, these same verses actually fit with the truth that is clearly explained in the Scriptures themselves.

Background Material

Before looking at the Bible to see which is really taught in its pages concerning the Trinity versus the truth about the Father and His Son, let's see what various churches and theologians admit concerning the Bible on these teachings. The first example is the Catholic Church itself. It states that all their other teachings are based on the Trinity doctrine.

The mystery of the Trinity is the central doctrine of Catholic Faith. Upon it are based all the other teachings of the church. (*Handbook for Today's Catholic*, p. 16 - a post-Vatican II publication).

So what are some examples of the other teachings of the Catholic church that are based on the Trinity? Here is a partial list: Natural immortality of the soul, Sunday-sacredness, Tradition in place of the Bible, Sprinkling, Celibacy, The immaculate conception of Mary, The priest's ability to forgive sins, the mass, praying to dead saints, infallibility of the pope, purgatory, eternal hell, and original sin.

The Catholics admit quite openly from time to time that their most basic doctrines cannot be found within the Bible and they use this fact to boast of their authority over all Christians. This is easy for them to do since virtually all Christian churches have followed their teaching despite the fact that these doctrinal changes, which they have made, are not found in the Bible:

Our opponents [Protestants] sometimes claim that no belief should be held dogmatically which is not explicitly stated in scripture (ignoring that it is only on the authority of the Church we recognize certain Gospels and not others as true). But the Protestant churches have themselves accepted such dogmas as the Trinity for which there is no such precise authority in the Gospels. . . (*Graham Green, "The Catholic Church's New Dogma: The Assumption Of Mary," Life Magazine, page 51, paragraph 5 of the article, October 30, 1950*).

This statement above is very interesting: (ignoring that it is only on the authority of the Church we recognize certain Gospels and not others as true). What they are saying concerning the authority of the church, is that the Catholics are the ones who decide what truth actually is and they also decide what is false. And their decisions are made outside the Bible. So they have decided that the Trinity is true and that the Biblical truth of the Father and His only Son is not true. Virtually all the churches have accepted their dogma on this point rather than to depend upon the precise authority of the Bible. Thus the Catholics can now express what they say concerning protestants, that they do not really follow what is explicitly stated in Scripture!

From this next source, we can see that the Catholic church admits that there are two basic doctrines that cannot be found in the Bible. These are their Sunday-sabbath, sometimes called the Christian Sabbath, and also the Trinity. They use this issue to prove their authority over the whole Christian community since virtually all Christian churches believe the changed doctrines that they have introduced.

Every Adventist knows that there is no evidence for a Sunday-sabbath in the Bible. We know the truth on this and we worship on the Bible Sabbath! However, we seem to have forgotten that the Trinity teaching is not found in the Bible either!

Q. Have you any other proofs that they [Protestants] are not guided by the Scriptures?

A. Yes; so many, that we cannot admit more than a mere specimen into this small work. They reject much that is clearly contained in Scripture, and profess more that is nowhere discoverable in that Divine Book.

Q. Give some examples of both?

A. They should, if the Scripture were their only rule, wash the feet of one another, according to the command of Christ, in the 13th chap. of St. John; - they should keep, not the Sunday, but the Saturday, according to the commandment, "Remember thou keep holy the Sabbath-day;" for this commandment has not, in Scripture, been changed or abrogated."

Q. Have you any other way of proving that the Church has power to institute festivals of precept?

A. Had she not such power, she could not have done that in which all modern religionists agree with her, - she could not have substituted the observance of Sunday the first day of the week, for the observance of Saturday the seventh day, a change for which there is no Scriptural authority.

Q. Do you observe other necessary truths as taught by the Church, not clearly laid down in Scripture?

A. The doctrine of the Trinity, a doctrine the knowledge of which is certainly necessary to salvation, is not explicitly and evidently laid down in Scripture, in the Protestant sense of private interpretation. {*Doctrinal Catechism* which is quoted in *The Review and Herald*, August 22, 1854} {Also published by Uriah Smith in *The Review and Herald* of September 24, 1859.}

Not only does the Catholic church say the Trinity is the central doctrine of the Catholic church but it also says that it is the central doctrine of the Christian religion.

The Trinity is. . . the central doctrine of the Christian religion (Catholic Encyclopedia, article: The Blessed Trinity)

Here is another example:

The mystery of the Most Holy Trinity **is the central mystery of Christian faith and life . . . It is the most fundamental and essential teaching** in the 'hierarchy of the truths of faith' Catechism of the Catholic Church, 1994, p. 62

Not only does the Catholic church say the Trinity is the central doctrine of the Catholic church but it also says that it is the central doctrine of the Christian religion. They know that once we start accepting the Trinity doctrine, that our doctrines will be more closely aligned to Catholic doctrine.

Fanciful Theories Regarding God

Be careful what you teach. Those who are learners of Christ will teach the same things that He taught. {1NL 123.6}

The religious bodies all over Christendom will become more and more closely united in sentiment. They will make of God a peculiar something in order to escape from loyalty to Him who is pure, holy, and undefiled, and who denounces all sin as a production of the apostate. . . {1NL 123.7 Notebook Leaflets V.1 p. 123}

It could be that the Trinity could be used by Satan to create a unity among worldly Christians.

According to the WCC Constitution, "agreement with the basis upon which the Council is founded" is a precondition for membership.

A later study by the central committee concluded that there was no need to change the basis, though it was necessary to explain its meaning and also make clear that . . . the Trinity [was] implicit in it. {From the World Council of Churches official website}

Q Catholic reasons for keeping Sunday

A. Because it is a day dedicated by the apostles to the honor of the most Holy Trinity

{Advent Review and Sabbath Herald, April 4, 1854}

Currently, the argument is often made that the Adventist doctrine of the Trinity is different to that of the Roman Catholic doctrine. They call their version by the same name, the Trinity. Yet, in spite of the fact that the Adventist explanation is a little different, it still teaches the same basic Trinity God. R.F. Cottrell said something interesting on this point:

This has been a popular doctrine and regarded as orthodox ever since the bishop of Rome was elevated to the popedom on the strength of it. It is accounted dangerous heresy to reject it; but each person is permitted to explain the doctrine in his own way. All seem to think they must hold it, but each has perfect liberty to take his own way to reconcile its contradictory propositions; and hence a multitude of views are held concerning it by its friends, all of them orthodox, I suppose, as long as they nominally assent to the doctrine. R.F. Cottrell, Advent Review and Sabbath Herald, June 1, 1869

If our doctrine is so different why has the Catholic church given us a metal.

Seventh-day Adventists agree with many Catholic doctrines, including the Trinity. . . By virtue of their . . . belief . . . in the doctrine of the Trinity, Seventh-day Adventists are both ontologically and theologically Christians. {Permission to publish this work is hereby granted. Robert H. Brown, Bishop of San Diego, August 10, 2004 www.catholic.com

The doctrine of the Trinity . . . lies at the root of every man's theology and affects his whole creed and practice. {Biblical Research Institute Andrews University seminary Studies Vol. 8, 1970, no. 1}

Because we have forgotten that the Trinity teaching is not found in the Bible, we tend to believe various theologians who say that this teaching is in the Bible after all. But note what they are really saying. Here is an example that we can find in the Adventist Review:

While **no single scriptural passage** states formally the doctrine of the Trinity, **it is assumed as a fact** by Bible writers and mentioned several times. **Only by faith can we accept the existence of the Trinity** (Quoted in *Adventist Review*, vol. 158, no. 31, July 1981, *The Trinity* p. 4).

Here's another one:

"A lecturer at Andrews University, Michigan stated that 'some will tend to resist this doctrine (of the Trinity) **because it is not found expressly stated in the Scriptures**'". {Adventist Review Aug 20, 1993 p 8.}

When they say that there is no passage that formally states the doctrine of the Trinity, or that the Trinity is not explicitly and evidently laid down in Scripture, or that there is no such precise authority in the Gospels; They are really saying that the actual doctrine of the Trinity is not found in the Bible at all. The Trinity teaching is not explained anywhere in the Bible. Instead, what they are really saying is that there are only certain verses that they can interpret as referring to the Trinity. So, they interpret some of the verses as if it agreed with the Trinity doctrine!

It is no wonder that the only way the Trinity can be accepted, is by faith, because it is not found in the Bible! Yet, this is a misuse of the word 'faith'. To have faith is to believe something that God has actually revealed in Scripture. To have faith in what God has said to us.

But to have faith in a teaching that is NOT in the Bible; That is presumption! It is not believing something that God has never even revealed or mentioned!!!

Of course, to say that that the Bible writers assumed the Trinity as fact, is actually an assumption in of itself since there is no evidence in the Bible itself. We must remember that this Trinity doctrine was not even formulated until the fourth century, so how could the Bible writers assume it as a fact???

Now, when they make these kind of statements, that the Trinity is not formally or explicitly stated in the Bible but that it is suggested etc., they are really choosing to ignore other specific points found in the Bible. There are two points that they choose to ignore:

- 1) These same verses that are said to fit the Trinity doctrine; These verses also fit the Biblical teaching of God the Father and his only begotten Son. So, their mentioning of these interpreted verses really do not show or decide anything since the text, by itself, can be explained either way; Either the Trinity or God with His Son. So this is a poor argument on their part.
- 2) They also ignore the fact that the actual Biblical truth concerning the Father and His Son, and the identity of the Holy Spirit, is actually spelled out and explained within the Bible itself.

When we start to look at the various Scriptural examples, we will see that Catholics, and other trinitarians, completely ignore these two points when they say that the Bible writers assumed, suggested, or even mentioned several times that of the Trinity is found in the Bible.

The doctrine of the Holy Trinity is not taught in the OT. In the NT the oldest evidence is in the Pauline epistles, especially 2 Cor 13:14 and 1 Cor 12:4-6. (*New Catholic Encyclopedia, Volume 14 page 306, 'Trinity, Holy (in the Bible)*)

The Catholics say outright that the Trinity doctrine is not found in the Old Testament. (There are some trinitarians who do say that there is evidence in the OT) The examples they give, are not where the Trinity doctrine that is explained, but they are only places where they can interpret the text as referring to the Trinity.

Here are the two Biblical texts that Trinitarians mention as supporting its doctrine:

19 "Go therefore and make disciples of all the nations, **baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit**, Matthew 28:19

14 The grace of the **Lord Jesus Christ**, and the love of **God**, and the communion of **the Holy Spirit** be with you all. Amen. 2 Corinthians 13:14

These verses only mentions the three: Jesus, God, and the Holy Spirit. Thus they say it supports the Trinity. But it does not teach anything that goes against what we have already learned from the Bible. Jesus and God, and the communion of the Holy Spirit are subjects which the Bible clearly explains. We have seen many of these teachings in the previous chapters of this study and we must not supply our own definition to the text. But to be honest, we must use Bible definitions to what we find in the Bible.

The next two verses of Scripture pretty much do the same thing.

4 There are diversities of gifts, but **the same Spirit**.

5 There are differences of ministries, but **the same Lord**.

6 And there are diversities of activities, but it is **the same God** who works all in all. 1 Corinthians 12:4-6

4 There is one body and one Spirit, just as you were called in one hope of your calling;

5 one Lord, one faith, one baptism;

6 one God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all.

7 But to each one of us **grace was given according to the measure of Christ's gift**. Ephesians 4:4-7

Their mentioning these three verses do nothing when the real truth is so clearly spelled out in the Bible. Their attack of the truth of the Bible while supporting the Trinity, only works with people who have not studied the Bible for themselves.

1 John 5:7

Since the Trinity doctrine is not in the Bible, some have thought to try to make small changes so that the Trinity teaching could be introduced into the Bible. The famous example of this is found in 1 John 5:7

Much of 1 John 5:7, that is found in the KJV, is NOT found in Greek manuscripts older than the 15th and 16th centuries. The disputed words found their way into the KJV by way of the Greek text of Erasmus.

Some have said that Erasmus offered to include the disputed words in his Greek Testament if he were shown even one Greek Manuscript that contained them. A manuscript was provided Erasmus, so he added it to his second edition of his Greek Testament. However, Erasmus questioned the truthfulness of the source and so in the third edition he took it out again. But when Tyndale translated Erasmus received text into English, he used the second edition.

It is now said that the later editions of the Vulgate acquired the passage by the mistake of a scribe who included an exegetical marginal comment in the Bible text that he was copying.

The disputed words have been widely used in support of the doctrine of the Trinity, but, in view of such overwhelming evidence against their authenticity, their support is valueless and should not be used.

In spite of fact that these extra words are found in the Vulgate, a Catholic Commentary on Holy Scripture freely admits that: "It is now generally held that this passage, called the Comma Johanneum, is a gloss that crept into the text of the Old Latin and Vulgate at an early date, but found its way into the Greek text only in the 15th and 16th centuries" (Thomas Nelson and Sons, 1954, p. 1186.)

So what was it that was added? Here is what is found in the New King James. (The added words are in red.)

7 For there are three that bear witness **in heaven: the Father, the Word, and the Holy Spirit; and these three are one.**

8 **And there are three that bear witness on earth: the Spirit, the water, and the blood; and these three agree as one.** 1 John 5:7-8 NKJV.

Here are the same two verses with the added words taken out.

7 For there are three that bear witness:

8 the Spirit, the water, and the blood; and these three agree as one. 1 John 5:7-8 NKJV.

Some have assumed this text was added to help solve the problem of not having any Biblical evidence to support the Trinity doctrine. However it does not even do that. All it does is to list the three; However, it is no more convincing than [Matthew 28:19](#); [1 Corinthians 12:4-6](#); [2 Corinthians 13:14](#); and [Ephesians 4:4-7](#) which we have already looked at above.

Romans 9:5

In His *Basics of Biblical Greek grammar*, William D. Mounce says this: The way a translator handles an ambiguous verse such as this reveals the theological learnings of the translator.

As it turns out, Romans 9:5 is one of those verses that can be drastically changed according to how it is translated. One of the reasons for this is that the original Greek did not have punctuation. Also, the words were run together one after another without any separation. (Punctuation and separated words became a part of the Greek text at a much later period.) So, when the modern translator puts in a comma, he does it according to his own theological thinking.

This is the question: should a major stop comma be used or should a minor stop comma be used? If a major stop is placed after *κατά σάρκα* (“according to the flesh”), then the final section of the verse becomes a statement about God the Father blessing the Son. This is what we see in the King James Version:

5 Whose are the fathers, and of whom as **concerning the flesh** Christ came, who is over all, **God blessed for ever**. Amen. Romans 9:5 KJV

But if a minor stop is placed after *κατά σάρκα* (“according to the flesh”), then the final words of the sentence will speak of Christ as being God: We see this in the NIV and NKJV

5 Theirs are the patriarchs, and from them is traced **the human ancestry** of Christ, **who is God over all**, for ever praised! Amen. Romans 9:5 NIV

5 of whom are the fathers and from whom, **according to the flesh**, Christ came, **who is over all, the eternally blessed God**. Amen. Romans 9:5 NKJV

So in the KJV, Christ is over all and He is blessed of God for ever. God bless Christ in the verse. But in the NIV, Christ is God over all. Thus He is to be forever praised because He is God! NKJV, Christ came, who is over all, the eternally blessed God. It is Quite a difference! Most scholars today believe that Jesus is, in fact, God. So they will translate this text as connecting Jesus with a clear-cut statement affirming the deity of Jesus Christ. In the process they automatically pronounce Him as God, as in the Trinity.

But what really happened is that Trinity teaching has been introduced into the text when it is not specifically indicated. In addition they use the confusion, of not having punctuation nor any separated words in the original Greek language, to do what they want.

One final note. When a translation either intentionally or accidentally translates various texts as being unfriendly to the Trinity dogma, that translation is often labeled as being a pro-arian translation. Thus most translations, even if they wanted to be fair to the text and they saw truth in the Father and His Son; They would avoid it as much as possible to avoid having the translation being labeled a pro-arian translation. Thus most

translations are very friendly to the trinitarian doctrine.

Individual Biblical Examples with Trinity Interpretations

John 1:1

John 1:1 is used to support the idea of the Trinity:

1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. John 1:1.

Many believe that John 1:1 is saying that the Word is God, along with the Father, are part of the Trinity from the beginning. They argue that the Son and the Father are of “the same substance”. To them that means they are not separate individual beings but are both part of the same body or Trinity and they believe that the phrase: **the Word was God** supports that idea. Others have suggested the opposite, that the verse is actually supporting the idea that Jesus was created.

So, what does it really describe? Does John 1:1 suggest that Jesus is created? Or does it suggest that He is part of the Trinity? Or maybe the text really suggests that Jesus is the begotten Son of God? Now, when we look at the last part of the verse in the original Greek we find two interesting surprises.

Ἐν ἀρχῇ ἦν ὁ Λόγος, καὶ ὁ Λόγος ἦν πρὸς τὸν Θεόν, καὶ Θεὸς ἦν ὁ Λόγος.
In beginning was the Word and the Word was with the God and God was the Word.

1) The word order is changed. It does not read like our English Bibles. Instead of saying “and the Word was God” the Greeks reads: “and God was the Word”. This does not follow the pattern of what we find in the middle of the verse. Yet this difference is not indicated in our English Bibles either. What did John mean by reversing the order of the words?

In English, the subject almost always comes first. However, Greek is actually quite flexible and the order of the words are made for purposes of emphasis rather than for strict grammatical reasons. So apparently John wanted to emphasize a certain point.

2) Notice inside the Red box. God does not have a definite article. A definite article is the word “the” (in Greek, there is only one article, the definite article “the”). The verse does not say: “the God” but only “God”; Why is that? You will notice that all the other places in the verse, where God is mentioned, there is always a definite article.

Greeks use the article a little differently than the way we use it. Since there is no article before the word “God”, it means that we cannot identify the Word and the Father as being the same thing or entity.

The Jehovah Witnesses take advantage of this fact, that there is no article before God, and they make the text say: **the Word was a God**. They emphasize the point that the Son of God was really created and this is their way to show that idea. But most believe this would be a poor translation.

Those knowledgeable in Greek say John is actually stressing the essence or quality of God on “The Word”.

I have come to the conclusion that they are right, that because there is no article before “God”, John was really emphasizing the essence or quality of God rather than saying that Jesus is God. So, the verse is really saying that “The Word” has the essence or quality of God. Thus “The Word” would have all the divine attributes that the Father has. The Son would be fully divine!

This would definitely agree with the old time Adventist position that Jesus is the only begotten Son of God and was fully divine. Mrs. White says that: “Christ was God essentially, and in the highest sense. He was with God from all eternity, God over all, blessed forevermore.” {RH, April 5, 1906 par. 6}

However, we must remember that the Trinitarian would connect this essence or quality of God with “the same substance” idea making the verse support the Trinity. “the same substance” is a key word phrase that stands for the trinity in that the Father is God, Jesus is God, and the Holy Spirit is God, but yet the Father is not the Son nor the Holy Spirit etc.

Like I mentioned already, most translators would not want to have their translation labeled as a pro-arian translation, but I wanted to look at as many versions of the Bible to see how John 1:1 is translated anyway. I thought there might be a chance that there could be a translation or two, in trying to be fair to the text, that might lead to a good translation.

While most of the Bible versions seem to have virtually the same translation with only small little variations; There are two that try to get this closer meaning of the original. Here’s the first one. Since it is from a Jewish source, they might not be as concerned about appearing arian:

1 Bereshis (in the Beginning) was the Dvar Hashem, and the Dvar Hashem was agav Hashem, and the Dvar Hashem **was nothing less, by nature, than Elohim!** John 1:1 Orthodox Jewish Bible

This version was hard for me to read but I was interested in the last part: [the Word] was nothing less, by nature, than God! It has the same idea that I see in the text. Namely, that the Word was nothing less, in nature, than God. This would mean that The Word would have the very same nature as God the Father! So, in my thinking, that would relate to the Son of God’s Divine nature being the same as God.

I do not know where the next version comes from. William D. Mounce, in his textbook on Basic Greek, gives only the last part of the verse as part of his discussion on John 1:1 and he does not identify the source of the text. It could very well be his own translation. But here it is:

1 . . . **“What God was, the Word was.”** John 1:1 (last part) Unknown WD Mounce translation.

This version also has the same idea, that the Jewish translation had. “what ever God is, His nature, the Word is” matches perfectly with: “The word was nothing less, by nature, than God”.

Now of course, the Trinitarian is thinking about God and the Word as being the “same substance” of the Trinity. But this text does not have to mean that at all. The understanding of this verse must match that of the rest of the Bible. We should use Bible definitions! We certainly must not keep to an understanding that actually comes from the pagan world! The concept of a Trinity God is not explained in the Bible so we must not force this verse to have that understanding.

So what could this verse mean? It could mean that the Word has all the divine attributes that the Father has. This does not agree with the idea that the Word was first created then elevated to the state of God. But it does match with the idea that He has always been divine ever since He was born. After all He is the Son of God! Thus, the Son has to have had a beginning, but He has always had the same attributes as the Father. This idea is

also honest with the Greek!

So, if I were translating this verse, and if I wanted to stay as close to the King James Version or New King James Version as possible, I might do something like the following:

1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with [the] God, and the Word was **fully divine**. John 1:1.
My own translation

If the Son of God, the Word, has all the divine attributes that the Father has, then the Son would be fully divine just like the Father. His nature would be the same as that of God the Father.

If we read the first two verses together, we can easily see that the Word and God are two different individuals and that the Son is just like His Father. So, the ideas in these verses now work together to form a clear picture of the Father and His Son because the verses now agrees with itself. This is not the case when considering the Trinity which presents a mystery. Because nothing makes sense when considering the Trinity Doctrine. It defies reason.

1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was **with** [the] God, and the Word was **fully divine**.
2 He was in the beginning **with** God. John 1:1-2

John's says that the Word was with God. Also, in verse two we see that the Word was in the beginning with God. So, we should be able to safely conclude that they are two different individuals. Not a Trinity.

So, in the last part of verse one, John must be saying that Jesus is in the form of God or that He is fully Divine like His Father. The way John wrote it suggests that very thing, that what God was, the Word was! The Word had the essence of God within Him.

John is not saying that the Word was the God. That would go against the rest of verses 1-2 and the rest of the Bible. But rather, he is saying "God was the Word" or "Divine was the Word". So, Jesus is in the form of God!

So, if only the verse by itself is considered, the verse will agree with both the Adventist understanding of the Father and His Son and also with the Trinitarian understanding of God. It seems that the meaning of the essence or quality of God in verse one could be translated either way, according to the translators understanding.

However, when we consider the context of the whole Bible, we must consider the necessity of translating the Scriptures so that all the parts agree with the whole. We must not translate one part one way and another part another. Since the pagan view of god is not in the Bible, we must realize that Paul was not thinking of a Trinity when he wrote these verses. So, I believe that He was speaking of the Word as being with God, His Father, and that the Word had all the Divine attributes as His Father.

4. The Spirit of Prophecy also teaches the truth about The Father and His only-begotten Son.

If you read some books printed by the church, you might find that they say Mrs. White does not specifically write about God and His Son. That she does not speak out or is not definite about the subject. Lets see if that is true:

There is a personal God, the Father; there is a personal Christ, the Son. “God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds;” Hebrews 1:1-2 Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high; Hebrews 1:3 “The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament sheweth his handywork. Day unto day uttereth speech, and night unto night sheweth knowledge. There is no speech nor language, where their voice is not heard.” Psalm 13:1-3 {6BC 1068.3} also {RH, November 8, 1898 par. 9} also {RH, March 17, 1904 par. 9 which quotes Hebrews 1:1-3 instead of Hebrews 1:1-2 & Psalm19:1-3}

Mrs. White speaks of two: There is a personal God, the Father, and there is a personal Christ, the Son. It is through His Son that God has made the worlds. And also, God has appointed His Son heir of all things.

The Scriptures clearly indicate the relation between God and Christ, and they bring to view as clearly **the personality and individuality of each**. “God, who at various times and in various ways spoke in time past to the fathers by the prophets, has in these last days spoken to us by His Son, whom He has appointed heir of all things, through whom also He made the worlds; who being the brightness of His glory and the express image of His person, and upholding all things by the word of His power, when He had by Himself purged our sins, sat down at the right hand of the Majesty on high, having become so much better than the angels, as He has by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they. For to which of the angels did He ever say: ‘You are My Son, Today I have begotten You’? And again: ‘I will be to Him a Father, And He shall be to Me a Son’?” Hebrews 1:1-5 **God is the Father of Christ; Christ is the Son of God. To Christ has been given an exalted position. He has been made equal with the Father. All the counsels of God are opened to His Son.** Testimonies 8, p.268 (1904)

Mrs. White very specifically tells what Hebrews 1:1-5 actually says about the Father and the Son. Jesus is the Son of God and God is His Father. God gave Him his exalted position and God made Him equal with the Father. Thus, all the counsels of God are opened to His Son! I don’t think Mrs. White could have worded it any stronger.

Also notice the date that she wrote it, 1904. The date of the next two quotes are even more recent! These quotes are all dated after the time when she wrote *the Desire of Ages* (1898)! That is when various people within the church say Mrs. White changed her mind and started believing something toward the idea of a Trinity god. We can see that she is still writing the same truths as she always has before. These following statements are also very strong, stating that the Father and Son are two different persons:

And truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ. All through the Scriptures, the Father and the Son are spoken of as two distinct personages. You will hear men endeavoring to make the Son of God a nonentity. He and the Father are one, but they are two personages. **Wrong sentiments regarding this are coming in, and we shall all have to meet them. Review and Herald, July 13, 1905 par. 3**

Our fellowship is with the Father and His Son. We have already seen that from the Bible texts in chapter one and two of this study. Also notice that Mrs. White says people are trying to make the Son of God a nonentity and that wrong sentiments regarding this were coming into the church. In another 10 years, Mrs. White will die and almost immediately in the 1919 Bible Conference, these leaders will be trying to introduce the Trinity to the church. So, we can see that there were people who were already trying to change our understanding of God; Back in 1905!

Nearly a year later Mrs. White says that who ever denies the personality of God and His Son is even denying God and Christ.

He who denies the personality of God and of his Son Jesus Christ, is denying God and Christ. “If that which ye have heard from the beginning shall remain in you, ye also shall continue in the Son, and in the Father.” **If you continue to believe and obey the truths you first embraced regarding the personality of the Father and the Son, you will be joined together with him in love.** Review and Herald, March 8 1906 par 19.

Even during the times of the early Adventist church, they were surrounded by trinitarians. Virtually the whole world of Christians are trinitarians and they have been trinitarians. The reason for that is that all those who did not believe in the Trinity in the past were killed by the Catholic Church and then they declared that anyone who did not believe in the Trinity was not Christians at all. But that is outside the topic of this study.

So, since Mrs. White and the early pioneers of the church were very familiar with what trinitarianism is, it is easy to see why these points were being made. It is also amazing to see the evidences that there were people who wanted to bring trinitarianism back into the church. To make Jesus a non-entity is to say that He is not a separate individual. You see, in the Trinity, the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit are not three individuals but they are somehow one while being three. But when Mrs. White says the Father and Son are two separate personages, she is speaking against trinitarianism. So, Jesus is a separate personality! This is what Mrs. White is referring to when she says: **“He who denies the personality of God and of his Son Jesus Christ, is denying God and Christ.”** We are denying God and Christ when we say they are part of a Trinity.

In later chapters of this study we will see that if we believe in the Trinity, it will actually change our whole belief system and structure. The special truths originally given to our church will no longer make sense with a Trinity god.

Thus, if we believe in the personality of God and of his Son Jesus Christ, we will then be able to understand the pillars of truth given our church much easier because it helps to explain what they do. It will be needed to survive the last times of this world’s history. Notice the next quote:

“you are not definitely clear on the personality of God, which is everything to us as a people. You have virtually destroyed the Lord God Himself”. Letter 300, 1903 EGW in letter to Kellogg

The personality of God is everything to us as a people because it allows us to fully understand the foundational truths that God has given our church. You will see more of this subject in chapters 6 through 8 and 11 through 12.

Here is a quote that Mrs. White made just two years before she died:

The present age is one of idolatry as verily as was that in which Elijah lived. No outward shrines may be visible, there may be no image for the eye to rest upon, yet thousands are following after the gods of this world, - after riches, fame, pleasure, **and the pleasing fables that permit man to follow the inclinations of the unregenerate heart.** **Multitudes have a wrong conception of God and of his attributes, and are as truly**

[serving a false god as were the worshipers of Baal](#). Review and Herald, November 6, 1913 par. 1

She said that there are multitudes who have a wrong conception of God and of his attributes and she connects this wrong conception of God to idolatry! Of course, we know that the multitudes of Christians all believe in the Trinity. These people are serving a false god as truly as the worshipers of Baal did years ago!

But notice the text in green above: pleasing fables that permit man to follow the inclinations of the unregenerate heart. This conception of God, the Trinity, allows the multitudes to follow the inclinations of their unregenerate heart because they are not required to get sin out of their lives. The Trinity God does not allow us the power to overcome our sins! This is an important result of having a wrong conception of God that we will see in chapters 11 and 12 of this study.

I love God. I love Jesus Christ, the Son of God, and I feel an intense interest in every soul who claims to be a child of God. I am determined to be a faithful steward so long as the Lord shall spare my life. I will not fail nor be discouraged. Selected Messages 3, p. 71-72 (1906)

Notice that Mrs. White mentions two, God and Jesus, the Son of God, whom she loves. Eight years following the publication *Desire of Ages*, she is saying the same things she said at the beginning.

Christ is one with the Father, but **Christ and God are two distinct personages**. Read the prayer of Christ in the seventeenth chapter of John, and you will find this point clearly brought out. How earnestly the Saviour prayed that His disciples might be one with Him as He is one with the Father. But the unity that is to exist between Christ and His followers does not destroy the personality of either. **They are to be one with Him as He is one with the Father**. Review and Herald, June 1, 1905 par. 14.

Often, these verses which say that God and Christ are one, are said to be describing the Trinity. But Mrs. White is very clear that the Father and Jesus are one in the same way that we can be one with them! This is no Trinity description. It is to show how God's church is to work together with God and the Son. All will be one in purpose and work.

Thus, we are one with Jesus and the Father just as the Father and Jesus are one. So, even with these kinds of statements, it is easy to see that Christ and God are two distinct personages. Mrs. White has always spoken of Jesus and the Father as two distinct personages. We should especially note that some third person is never included in these kind of quotes.

In the next quote, the Father and Son are again cited:

“And truly our fellowship is with **the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ**.” All through the Scriptures, the Father and the Son are spoken of **as two distinct personages**. **You will hear men endeavoring to make the Son of God a nonentity. He and the Father are one, but they are two personages. Wrong sentiments regarding this are coming in, and we shall all have to meet them.** Review and Herald, July 13, 1905 par. 3.

But as we look at what she said we see danger in the winds. There are now men endeavoring to make the Son of God a nonentity. Thus wrong sentiments regarding The Father and Son, are coming into the church.

When Mrs. White died, these church leaders started to work bringing the Trinity doctrine into the church. There are several times when Mrs. White spoke of these kinds of doctrines as coming into the church and we would have to meet them!

I entreat every one to be clear and firm regarding the certain truths that we have heard and received and

advocated. The statements of God's Word are plain. **Plant your feet firmly on the platform of eternal truth. Reject every phase of error**, even though it be covered with a semblance of reality, **which denies the personality of God and of Christ.** Review and Herald, August 31, 1905 par. 11.

Since there are people who are trying to change our minds on who God or what God is; Mrs. White tells us to reject every phase of error which denies the personality of God and of Christ. We are to plant our feet firmly on the platform of eternal truth. Especially since the Bible statements are really plain, we should be clear and firm on this as well!

The Word of the Lord has guided our steps since the passing of the time in 1844. We have searched the Scriptures; we have built solidly; and we have not had to tear up our foundations and put in new timbers. EG White, Manuscript Releases Vol. 1, p. 54 (1907).

She says we have not had to tear up our foundations and put in new timbers. (New timbers would be new doctrines.) Thus according to Mrs. White, the truth we had at the beginning still stands and it will continue to stand. It has stood the test of time already!

The evidence given in our early experience **has the same force that it had then. The truth is the same as it ever has been, and not a pin or a pillar can be moved from the structure of truth.** That which was sought for out of the Word in 1844, 1845, and 1846 remains the truth **in every particular.** EG White Manuscript Releases Vol. 1, p. 52 (1906)

The truth is the same as it ever has been. Not a pin or pillar can be moved from the structure of truth. So every particular remains truth.

In the first chapter of *Patriarchs and Prophets*, Mrs. White takes a lot of space to describe what happened in heaven when Satan started to become jealous and then rebelled against God. In this discussion, she also spends a lot of space talking about God the Father and His only begotten Son. The next four quotes are all from the same chapter. It would be well for you to read the entire first chapter of *Patriarchs and Prophets* because there is so much there about the Son of God and God, His Father than we have room for in this study. When the whole chapter is read, it makes the four short quotes I have below much more powerful since so much more background is added to it. So please read that chapter!

The Sovereign of the universe was not alone in His work of beneficence. **He had an associate--a co-worker who could appreciate His purposes**, and could share His joy in giving happiness to created beings. "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God." John 1:1, 2. **Christ, the Word, the only begotten of God, was one with the eternal Father--one in nature, in character, in purpose--the only being that could enter into all the counsels and purposes of God.** "His name shall be called Wonderful, Counselor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace." Isaiah 9:6. His "goings forth have been from of old, from everlasting." Micah 5:2. And the Son of God declares concerning Himself: "**The Lord possessed Me in the beginning of His way**, before His works of old. **I was set up from everlasting.** . . . When He appointed the foundations of the earth: **then I was by Him, as one brought up with Him: and I was daily His delight, rejoicing always before Him.**" Proverbs 8:22-30. {PP 34.1}

The Son is the associate, a co-worker with God, who could appreciate His purposes and share His joy. There is no other one even mentioned. Just the Father and His Son! So, the Son is the only one who could appreciate God's purposes. The Son is the only being that could enter into all the counsels and purposes of God.

In this chapter, you will see that there is nothing like the Trinity in it. But rather, God the Father, and the Son

of God are two different individuals! They are the only two who are Divine.

The King of the universe summoned the heavenly hosts before Him, that in their presence He might set forth the true position of His Son and show the relation He sustained to all created beings. **The Son of God shared the Father's throne, and the glory of the eternal, self-existent One encircled both.** About the throne gathered the holy angels, a vast, unnumbered throng--"ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands" (Revelation 5:11.), the most exalted angels, as ministers and subjects, rejoicing in the light that fell upon them from the presence of the Deity. Before the assembled inhabitants of heaven the King declared that **none but Christ, the Only Begotten of God, could fully enter into His purposes, and to Him it was committed to execute the mighty counsels of His will.** The Son of God had wrought the Father's will in the creation of all the hosts of heaven; **and to Him, as well as to God, their homage and allegiance were due.** Christ was still to exercise divine power, in the creation of the earth and its inhabitants. But in all this He would not seek power or exaltation for Himself contrary to God's plan, but would exalt the Father's glory and execute His purposes of beneficence and love. {PP 36.2}

So, the Son shared His Father's throne and His Father's glory surrounded Him as well as His Father. None but Christ could fully enter into God's purposes. As you can see, many more things are said about Jesus which all add up to a very strong case that Mrs. White totally believed in God the Father and His only begotten Son. The angels were told of the Son's true position and thus they poured out their love and adoration to Him as well to His Father.

The angels joyfully acknowledged the supremacy of Christ, and prostrating themselves before Him, poured out their love and adoration. Lucifer bowed with them, but in his heart there was a strange, fierce conflict. Truth, justice, and loyalty were struggling against envy and jealousy. The influence of the holy angels seemed for a time to carry him with them. As songs of praise ascended in melodious strains, swelled by thousands of glad voices, the spirit of evil seemed vanquished; unutterable love thrilled his entire being; his soul went out, in harmony with the sinless worshippers, **in love to the Father and the Son.** But again he was filled with pride in his own glory. His desire for supremacy returned, and envy of Christ was once more indulged. The high honors conferred upon Lucifer were not appreciated as God's special gift, and therefore, called forth no gratitude to his Creator. He gloried in his brightness and exaltation and aspired to be equal with God. He was beloved and revered by the heavenly host, angels delighted to execute his commands, and he was clothed with wisdom and glory above them all. Yet the Son of God was exalted above him, as one in power and authority with the Father. He shared the Father's counsels, while Lucifer did not thus enter into the purposes of God. **"Why," questioned this mighty angel, "should Christ have the supremacy? Why is He honored above Lucifer?"** {PP 36.3}

But notice what Mrs. White says about Lucifer in the next quote:

So long as all created beings acknowledged the allegiance of love, there was perfect harmony throughout the universe of God. It was the joy of the heavenly host to fulfill the purpose of their Creator. They delighted in reflecting His glory and showing forth His praise. And while love to God was supreme, love for one another was confiding and unselfish. There was no note of discord to mar the celestial harmonies. But a change came over this happy state. **There was one who perverted the freedom that God had granted to His creatures. Sin originated with him [Lucifer] who, next to Christ, had been most honored of God** and was highest in power and glory among the inhabitants of heaven. Lucifer, "son of the morning," was first of the covering cherubs, holy and undefiled. He stood in the presence of the great Creator, and the ceaseless beams of glory enshrouding the eternal God rested upon him. "Thus saith the Lord God; Thou sealest up the sum, full of wisdom, and perfect in beauty. Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was thy covering. . . . Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee so: thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire. Thou wast perfect in thy

ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee.” Ezekiel 28:12-15. {PP 35.1}

Next to Christ, Lucifer had been the most honored of God. If Satan is the third highest, then there is no third person of a Trinity God. Nor is there a third separate Divine person called the Holy Spirit. Only the Father and His Son. From an earlier book, the same messages are told:

The Lord has shown me that Satan was once an honored angel in heaven, **next to Jesus Christ**. Spiritual Gifts V 1 p 17 (1858)

And I saw that when **God said to his Son, Let us make man in our image**, Satan was jealous of Jesus. Spiritual Gifts V 1 p17 (1858)

That Bible verse in Genesis 1:26 saying: Then God said, “Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness . . . Theologians usually say is referring to the Trinity. But here, Mrs. White says it refers specifically to the Father and His Son! Man was made in the image of both God the Father and the Son of God.

God informed Satan that to his Son alone he would reveal his secret purposes, and he required all the family in Heaven, even Satan, to yield him implicit, unquestioned obedience; but that he (Satan) had proved himself unworthy a place in heaven. The Spirit of Prophecy V1 p22 (1870)

In the Great Controversy, the same message is made concerning the Son in relation to His Father. It would also be good to read chapter 29 (the Origin of Evil) of the Great Controversy. The same kinds of things about God and His Son are discussed in this chapter.

Before the entrance of evil there was peace and joy throughout the universe. All was in perfect harmony with the Creator’s will. Love for God was supreme, love for one another impartial. **Christ the Word, the Only Begotten of God, was one with the eternal Father,--one in nature, in character, and in purpose,--the only being in all the universe that could enter into all the counsels and purposes of God.** By Christ the Father wrought in the creation of all heavenly beings. “By Him were all things created, that are in heaven, . . . whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers” (Colossians 1:16); **and to Christ, equally with the Father, all heaven gave allegiance.** {Great Controversy p. 493.1 1911}

The Son is the only one in the whole universe that can enter into all the counsels and purposes of God! That is a very powerful statement. Christ the Word, then is the Only Begotten Son of God and He is one with the eternal Father. Notice that God is called the eternal Father, but the Son is not the eternal Son; But rather, He is the Only Begotten of God. So the Son obviously had a beginning. But no where in the Bible does it say He was created! He issued forth out of God.

These are only a small sample of quotes. But the more you look up, the stronger the idea is reached that Mrs. White taught the same truth from beginning to end. She never changed her mind on God.

The Father and His Only-begotten Son

Let’s look at more quotes so we can have a larger sampling of what Mrs. White says. The following group of quotes are similar to what we have already seen.

Mrs. White often spoke of Jesus being the only-begotten gift that God gave to us.

There is but one way of escape for the sinner. There is but one agency whereby he may be cleansed from sin. He must accept the propitiation that has been made by the Lamb of God, who taketh away the sins of the world. The shed blood of Christ cleanseth us from all sin. "For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him." "Him hath God exalted with his right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins." A complete offering has been made; for "**God so loved the world, that he gave his only-begotten Son,**"-- **not a son by creation, as were the angels, nor a son by adoption, as is the forgiven sinner, but a Son begotten in the express image of the Father's person, and in all the brightness of his majesty and glory, one equal with God in authority, dignity, and divine perfection. In him dwelt all the fullness of the Godhead bodily.** {ST, May 30, 1895 par. 3}

We can see the same Biblical truth about the Father and Son over and over again in her writings.

The Eternal Father, the unchangeable one, **gave his only begotten Son, tore from his bosom Him who was made in the express image of his person**, and sent him down to earth to reveal how greatly he loved mankind. He is willing to do more, "more than we can ask or think." An inspired writer asks a question which should sink deep into every heart: "**He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all**, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things? Rom. 8:32" Review and Herald, July 9, 1895 par. 13.

The Father gave us His only begotten Son that was torn from His bosom. God spared not his own Son, but He delivered Him up for all of us! The Son was God's son long before He came to earth. He was torn from His Father's bosom and God delivered Him up for us. That is how close they are to each other and that is how much God loves us!

He was indeed more than a teacher come from God; **he was the only-begotten Son of the Father**, the one sent into the world to save those who should believe on him. Signs of the Times, November 23, 1891 par. 3.

Over and over, Mrs. White repeats the fact that Jesus is the only begotten Son of the Father.

Who is Christ? - **He is the only begotten Son of the living God**. He is the Father as a word that expresses the thought, - as a thought made audible. Christ is the word of God. The Youth's Instructor, June 28, 1894 par. 9.

The next quote describes a little of the sufferings that the Father suffered.

The love of God was Christ's theme when speaking of his mission and his work. "Therefore doth my Father love me," he says, "because I lay down my life, that I might take it again." My Father loves you with a love so unbounded that he loves me the more because I have given my life to redeem you. He loves you, and he loves me more because I love you, and give my life for you. "A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you." Well did the disciples understand this love as they saw their Saviour enduring shame, reproach, doubt, and betrayal, as they saw his agony in the garden, and his death on Calvary's cross. This is a love the depth of which no sounding can ever fathom. As the disciples comprehended it, as their perception took hold of God's divine compassion, **they realized that there is a sense in which the sufferings of the Son were the sufferings of the Father. From eternity there was a complete unity between the Father and the Son. They were two, yet little short of being identical; two in individuality, yet one in spirit, and heart, and character.** {YI, December 16, 1897 par. 5}

The two have created all things together. So, it only makes sense that they would both suffer. This speaks of the love that both the Father and Son have for us, that we might be with them.

In order that the human family might have no excuse because of temptation, Christ became one with them.

The only being who was one with God lived the law in humanity, descended to the lowly life of a common laborer, and toiled at the carpenter's bench with his earthly parent. He lived the life which he requires of all who claim to be his children. Thus was cut off the powerful argument of Satan that God required of humanity a self-denial and subjection that he would not himself render. The weapons that Satan designed to use against God, were taken from his hands. {ST, October 14, 1897 par. 3}

Jesus was the only being who was one with God and yet the Son did what is required of us! That of self-denial and subjection to God.

Let the brightest example the world has yet seen be your example, rather than the greatest and most learned men of the age, **who know not God, nor Jesus Christ whom He has sent. The Father and the Son alone are to be exalted.** The Youth's Instructor, July 7, 1898 par. 2.

There are only two alone who are to be exalted. The Father and His Son. There is no one else since the Father and the Son alone are to be exalted.

It is the Father who "so loved the world that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. Review and Herald, July 19, 1892 par. 7

It is the Father who so loved us that He gave His only begotten Son.

The great gift of salvation has been placed within our reach **at an infinite cost to the Father and the Son.** Review and Herald, March 10, 1891 par. 2

It is at infinite cost that the Father gave up His son to save us!

No man, nor even the highest angel, can estimate the great cost; **it is known only to the Father and the Son.** The Bible Echo, October 28, 1895 par. 4

We cannot imagine what that cost is to our God and our Saviour.

I love God. I love Jesus Christ, the Son of God, and I feel an intense interest in every soul who claims to be a child of God. I am determined to be a faithful steward so long as the Lord shall spare my life. I will not fail nor be discouraged. Selected Messages Book 3 pp 71-72. (1906)

There are only two alone who are to be exalted. The Father and His Son.

The Fatherhood of God is given to us in the gift of Jesus Christ; and as God was one with his only begotten Son, so he would have his earthly children one with him. Review and Herald, Sept. 30, 1909 par. 15

Mrs. White speaks of the Fatherhood of God.

Youths Instructor, Dec. 16, 1897. It says: **"From eternity there was a complete unity between the Father and the Son. They were two, yet little short of being identical; two in individuality, yet one in spirit, and heart, and character"**.

There was and still is a complete unity between the Father and the Son.

Satan is determined that men shall not see the love of God which led Him to give His only-begotten Son to save a lost race; for **it is the goodness of God that leads men to repentance.** Selected Messages 1 p. 156. (1907)

The love of God is especially seen in the fact that God gave us His only begotten Son!

Jehovah is the name given to Christ. Signs of the Times, May 3, 1899, par 2 (Hebrews 1:4 tells how)

Jesus, because He is the Son of God, has inherited God's name. So, Jehovah is the name given to Christ.

5. The Spirit of Prophecy also teaches the truth about the Holy Spirit

While this is the chapter for the truth about the Holy Spirit, you will also find a large number of quotes in the chapter following this chapter that teaches the truth about the Holy Spirit. Chapter 6 deals with certain quotes that are used to say Mrs. White started teaching Trinity doctrine. To help explain these certain quotes a lot of other quotes are brought in. So, in chapter 6, a lot of the quotes will be found that very strongly supports the truth about the Holy Spirit. They are not all in this chapter so as not to have too much repetition.

Christ is the Comforter

The Comforter cannot be a third person of God since the Father and the Son alone are to be exalted:

Let the brightest example the world has yet seen be your example, rather than the greatest and most learned men of the age, **who know not God, nor Jesus Christ whom He has sent. The Father and the Son alone are to be exalted.** The Youth's Instructor, July 7, 1898 par. 2.

The Spirit is identified as the Spirit of Christ.

Let them be thankful to God for His manifold mercies and be kind to one another. They have **one God and one Saviour**; and **one Spirit--the Spirit of Christ--**is to bring unity into their ranks. *Testimonies Vol 9, p. 189.*

Three are mentioned, one God, one Saviour and one Spirit. But since the Spirit is the Spirit of Christ, it only makes sense that there are only two that are exalted; the Father and His Son. Thus it is Jesus who is our Comforter!

July 16, 1892: **The Saviour is our Comforter. This I have proved Him to be.** I do not understand why I am so afflicted. At first I tried to reason out why I did not have strength to bear my testimony to the people in this country. But I try no longer. . . . {Manuscript Releases Vol 8, p. 49.3 (1892) 8MR 49.3}

Mrs White says she has proved it to herself that Jesus is our Comforter. The Savior even invites our confidence in Him as well:

Christ comes as a Comforter to all who believe. He invites your confidence. Manuscript Releases Vol 8, p. 57 (1898)

That one Spirit which is so often mentioned is not a third member of the Trinity but it is the Spirit of Christ, the Holy Spirit.

The work of the holy Spirit is immeasurably great. It is from this source that power and efficiency come to the worker for God; **and the holy Spirit is the comforter, as the personal presence of Christ to the soul.** He who looks to Christ in simple, childlike faith, is made a partaker of the divine nature through the agency of the holy Spirit. When led by the Spirit of God, the Christian may know that he is made complete in him who is the head of all things. As Christ was glorified on the day of Pentecost, so will he again be glorified in the closing work of the gospel, when he shall prepare a people to stand the final test, in the closing conflict of the great controversy. The prophet describes the enemy's plan of battle saying:-- {RH, November 29, 1892 par. 3}

The Holy Spirit is the comforter because it is the personal presence of Christ to our soul.

“Christ declared that after His ascension, **He would send to His church, as his crowning gift, the Comforter**, who was to take His place. This Comforter is the Holy Spirit, - *the soul of His life*, the efficacy of His church, the light and life of the world. **With His Spirit, Christ sends a reconciling influence and a power that takes away sin**”. {Review and Herald, May 19, 1904}

Christ’s Spirit being sent to us is Christ’s crowning gift to us. It is for reconciling and it also gives us the power to take away sin from our lives.

“He that loveth Me shall be loved of My Father, and I will love him, and will manifest Myself to him.” Jesus read the future of His disciples. He saw one brought to the scaffold, one to the cross, one to exile among the lonely rocks of the sea, others to persecution and death. He encouraged them with the promise that in every trial He would be with them. That promise has lost none of its force. **The Lord knows all about His faithful servants who for His sake are lying in prison or who are banished to lonely islands. He comforts them with His own presence.** When for the truth’s sake the believer stands at the bar of unrighteous tribunals, Christ stands by his side. All the reproaches that fall upon him, fall upon Christ. Christ is condemned over again in the person of His disciple. When one is incarcerated in prison walls, Christ ravishes the heart with His love. When one suffers death for His sake, Christ says, “I am He that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive forevermore, . . . and have the keys of hell and of death.” Revelation 1:18. The life that is sacrificed for Me is preserved unto eternal glory. {DA 669.3}

Even within the *Desire of Ages* we find the same truth. Jesus will manifest Himself to us and will comfort us with His own presence.

There is no comforter like Christ, so tender and so true. He is touched with the feeling of our infirmities. His Spirit speaks to the heart. Circumstances may separate us from our friends; the broad, restless ocean may roll between us and them. Though their sincere friendship may still exist, they may be unable to demonstrate it by doing for us that which would be gratefully received. But no circumstances, no distance, can separate us from the heavenly Comforter. Wherever we are, wherever we may go, he is always there, one given in Christ’s place, to act in his stead. He is always at our right hand, to speak soothing, gentle words; to support, sustain, uphold, and cheer. The influence of the Holy Spirit is the life of Christ in the soul. This Spirit works in and through every one who receives Christ. Those who know the indwelling of this Spirit reveal its fruit,—love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith. {RH, October 26, 1897 par. 15}

There is no comforter like Christ! Over and over again we see the same truths.

How essential that we have the enlightenment of the Spirit of God; for thus only can we see the glory of Christ, and by beholding become changed from character to character in and through faith in Christ. We turn from the picture of our shortcomings to behold the atonement made for us, and we rejoice as we know that we may be clothed with Christ’s righteousness. In Him all fulness dwells. He has grace and pardon for every soul. **As by faith we look to Jesus, our faith pierces the shadow, and we adore God for His wondrous love in giving Jesus the Comforter.** {19MR 297.3}

The Father gave Jesus the Comforter to us that we might be saved!

“As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world. And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth. Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; that they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. **And the glory which**

thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one: I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me. **Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me; be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me:** for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world. O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee: but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me. And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it: that **the love wherewith thou hast loved me may be in them, and I in them.**” {RH, January 27, 1903 par. 11}

Satan understands this prayer better than do the members of churches and the heads of families. He does not want the people of God to understand it, lest they should see **the advantage God has bestowed on them,** and know the day of their visitation. He would keep them in discord and strife over little misunderstandings and little differences, which, dwelt upon, grow into variance and hatred. He knows that if he can keep them thus, they will present before the world a showing exactly the opposite of that which God desires them to present. {RH, January 27, 1903 par. 12}

I urge our people to cease their criticism and evil speaking, and go to God in earnest prayer, asking him to help them to help the erring. Let them link up with one another and with **Christ. Let them study the seventeenth of John, and learn how to pray and how to live the prayer of Christ. He is the Comforter. He will abide in their hearts, making their joy full.** His words will be to them as the bread of life, and in the strength thus gained they will be enabled to develop characters that will be an honor to God. Perfect Christian fellowship will exist among them. There will be seen in their lives the fruit that always appears as the result of obedience to the truth. {RH, January 27, 1903 par. 13}

We have been given a special help in that God has given us a special advantage against Satan and sin. We need to learn from Christ how to pray and how to live the prayer of Christ. According to the promise, Jesus is our Comforter and He will live in our hearts to make us full of joy that we may see the glory that Jesus prayed that we would receive.

Jesus and not some third being is our comforter and it is central to our faith.

“I will not leave you comfortless; I will come to you.” The divine Spirit that the world’s Redeemer promised to send, is the presence and power of God. He will not leave his people in the world destitute of his grace, to be buffeted by the enemy of God, and harassed by the oppression of the world; but he will come to them. The world cannot see the truth; they know not the Father or the Son, but it is only because they do not desire to know God, they do not wish to look upon Jesus, to see his goodness, his love, his heavenly attractions. Jesus is inviting all men to accept him; and wherever the heart is open to receive him, **he will come in,** gladdening the soul with the light and joy of his presence. {ST, November 23, 1891 par. 1}

The divine Spirit that Jesus promised is the presence and power of God. Jesus will come in to us.

As the divine endowment--the power of the Holy Spirit--was given to the disciples, so it will today be given to all who seek aright. This power alone is able to make us wise unto salvation and to fit us for the courts above. Christ wants to give us a blessing that will make us holy. “These things have I spoken unto you,” He says, “that My joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full.” John 15:11. Joy in the Holy Spirit is health-giving, life-giving joy. **In giving us His Spirit, God gives us Himself, making Himself a fountain of divine influences, to give health and life to the world.** {7T 273.1 published 1902}

As God so liberally bestows His gifts on you, remember that it is in order that you may return them to the Giver, multiplied by being imparted. Bring into the lives of others light and joy and peace. Every day we need the discipline of self-humiliation, that we may be prepared to receive the heavenly gift, not to hoard it, not to rob God’s children of His blessing, but to give it in all its rich fullness to others. When more than now shall we need a heart open to receive, aching, as it were, with its longing to impart? {7T 273.2 1902}

God has given the best gift He could possibly have given to us. God actually gave Himself to us!

While it is the presence and power of God, it is also the spirit of Christ.

It is not essential for you to know and be able to define just what the Holy Spirit is. Christ tells us that the Holy Spirit is the Comforter, and the Comforter is the Holy Ghost, “the Spirit of truth, which the Father shall send in My name.” “I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you for ever; even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth Him not, neither knoweth Him: but ye know Him, for He dwelleth with you, and shall be in you” [John 14:16, 17]. **This refers to the omnipresence of the Spirit of Christ, called the Comforter.** Again Jesus says, “I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. Howbeit when He, the Spirit of truth is come, He will guide you into all truth” [John 16:12, 13]. {14MR 179.2}

Jesus promised us the Comforter which is the omnipresence of the Spirit of Christ!

Christ’s Spirit is the Third Person of the Godhead

Does Mrs. White ever define what the third person of the Godhead is? Yes, we have already seen that the third person is actually the Spirit of Christ.

Let them be thankful to God for His manifold mercies and be kind to one another. They have **one God** and **one Saviour**; and **one Spirit--the Spirit of Christ--**is to bring unity into their ranks. {*Testimonies Vol 9, p. 189*}

Here again is another quote which shows that the Holy Spirit is really Jesus Christ:

. . . “And we know that the Son of God is come, **and hath given us an understanding, that we may know him that is true, and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life. Little children keep yourselves from idols.**” [1 John 5:20, 21.] The Lord is soon to come. **We want that complete and perfect understanding which the Lord alone can give. It is not safe to catch the spirit from another. We want the Holy Spirit, which is Jesus Christ. If we commune with God, we shall have strength and grace and efficiency.** {Lt66-1894.18}

We are to keep ourselves from idols, which are Satanic, and Satan is the enemy of God. With this in mind we must not be attracted to some other spirit, a third person of a trinity. Thus, it is not safe to catch the spirit from another source. The trinity is another source. We want the Holy Spirit, which is Jesus Christ. So, if we commune with God, we will have strength, grace, and efficiency. Thus it is extremely important that we not worship the trinity. But we must worship the true God!

It is the Spirit of Christ that quickeneth:

“I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life,” Christ declares; “no one cometh unto the Father, but by me.” Christ is invested with power to give life to all creatures. “As the living Father hath sent me,” he says, “and I live by the Father; so he that eateth me, even he shall live by me. . . .**It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing; the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life.**” **Christ is not here referring to his doctrine, but to his person, the divinity of his character.** “Verily verily, I say unto you,” he says again, “The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself; and hath given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man.” {RH, April 5, 1906 par. 12}

When Jesus speaks of the Spirit that quickeneth, Christ is speaking of His person, the divinity of his character.

Christ declared that after his ascension, he would send to his church, as his crowning gift, the Comforter, who was to take his place. This Comforter is the Holy Spirit,—the soul of his life, the efficacy of his church, the light and life of the world. **With his Spirit Christ sends a reconciling influence and a power that takes away sin.** {RH, May 19, 1904 par. 1}

In the gift of the Spirit, Jesus gave to man the highest good that heaven could bestow. The Saviour looked on humanity, and saw that it was under the power of the prince of darkness; but he saw also that there was hope for human beings because there was power in the divine nature successfully to contend with evil agencies. With glad assurance he said, “Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out. **And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me.**” {RH, May 19, 1904 par. 2}

The Spirit was given as a regenerating agency, and without this the sacrifice of Christ would have been of no avail. The power of evil had been strengthening for centuries, and the submission of man to this satanic captivity was amazing. Sin could be resisted and overcome only through **the mighty agency of the third person of the Godhead**, who would come with no modified energy, but in the fulness of divine power. It is the Spirit that makes effectual what has been wrought out by the world’s Redeemer. It is by the Spirit that the heart is made pure. Through the Spirit the believer becomes a partaker of the divine nature. **Christ has given his Spirit** as a divine power to overcome all hereditary and cultivated tendencies to evil, and to impress **his own character** upon the church. {Review and Herald, May 19, 1904 Par. 3}

The Spirit of Christ is a reconciling influence that we can have. It’s a power that can take away our sin and draw us to Himself. So, when Mrs. White speaks of the mighty agency of the third person of the Godhead, she is speaking of Christ who has given us his Spirit and His own character to the church. It is Jesus who will draw all men unto Him since He was lifted up from the earth at the cross.

Christ could not be Everywhere at Once

So what is the Holy Spirit?

Cumbered with humanity, Christ could not be in every place personally; therefore it was altogether for their advantage that He should leave them, go to His father, and send the Holy Spirit to be His successor on earth. **The Holy Spirit is Himself divested of the personality of humanity and independent thereof.** He would represent Himself as present in all places by His Holy Spirit, as the Omnipresent. Manuscript Releases Volume 14, p. 23 (1895)

The Holy Spirit is Jesus, but without the personality of humanity.

Now, why is the church weak and ineffective?

“The reason why the churches are weak and sickly and ready to die, is that the enemy has brought influences of a discouraging nature to bear upon trembling souls. **He has sought to shut Jesus from their view as the Comforter, as one who reproves, who warns, who admonishes them,** saying, ‘This is the way, walk ye in it’”. **Christ has all power in heaven and in earth, and he can strengthen the wavering, and set right the erring.** He can inspire with confidence, with hope in God; and confidence in God always results in creating confidence in one another. {RH, August 26, 1890 par. 10}

Satan has tried to get rid of the idea of Christ being our Comforter. This has made us weak because it is Christ who has all power in heaven and on earth who can help us be saved. He is the one who reproves and

warns us.

It took a little while for the disciples to understand how Jesus would manifest Himself to us yet to the world He would be invisible. Here Mrs. White explains a bit more of what is happening.

That Christ should manifest Himself to them, and yet be invisible to the world, was a mystery to the disciples. They could not understand the words of Christ in their spiritual sense. They were thinking of the outward, visible manifestation. **They could not take in the fact that they could have the presence of Christ with them, and yet He be unseen by the world.** They did not understand the meaning of a spiritual manifestation. {SW, September 13, 1898 par. 2 *The Southern Work*}

The great Teacher longed to give the disciples all the encouragement and comfort possible; for they were to be sorely tried. But it was difficult for them to comprehend His words. They had yet to learn of that spiritual life that could give them the spiritual power they needed. {SW, September 13, 1898 par. 3 *The Southern Work*}

The promise of a Comforter presented a rich truth to them. It assured them that they should not lose their faith under the most trying circumstances. The Holy Spirit sent in the name of Christ was to teach them all things, and bring all things to their remembrance. **The Holy Spirit was to be the representative of Christ, the Advocate who is constantly pleading for the fallen race.** He pleads that spiritual power may be given them, that by the power, mightier than all the enemies of God and man, they may be able to overcome their spiritual foes. {SW, September 13, 1898 par. 4 *The Southern Work*}

He who knows the end from the beginning has provided for the attack of Satanic agencies, and he will fulfill His word to the faithful in every age. That word is sure and steadfast; not one jot or tittle of it can fail. If man will keep under the protection of God, his banner will be over them as an impregnable fortress. He will give evidence that His word can never fail. He will prove a light that shineth in a dark place until the day dawn. He, the Son of Righteousness, will arise with healing in his beams. {SW, September 13, 1898 par. 5 *The Southern Work*}

The Holy Spirit is the representative of Christ, the presence of Christ with us.

Christ's Baptism

Some want to teach that when Jesus was baptized that all three parts of the Trinity were involved. The Father speaking, the dove representing the Holy Spirit, and the Son being baptized. However, Mrs. White paints a completely different picture:

Never before had angels listened to such a prayer as Christ offered at his baptism, and they were solicitous to be the bearers of the message from the Father to his Son. But, no! **direct from the Father issues the light of his glory.** The heavens were opened, and **beams of glory rested upon the Son of God and assumed the form of a dove, in appearance like burnished gold.** The dove-like form was emblematical of the meekness and gentleness of Christ. While the people stood spell-bound with amazement, their eyes fastened upon Christ, **from the opening heavens came these words:** **“This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.”** The words of confirmation that Christ is the Son of God were given to inspire faith in those who witnessed the scene, and to sustain the Son of God in his arduous work. Notwithstanding the Son of God was clothed with humanity, **yet Jehovah, with his own voice, assures him of his sonship with the Eternal.** In this manifestation to his Son, God accepts humanity as exalted through the excellence of his beloved Son. {Review and Herald, January 21, 1873 par. 5}

It is the Father that issues the light of his glory. This is what assumed the form of a dove! He then pronounces to those who witnessed Christ's baptism: “This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.” So, according to Mrs. White, there is no Trinity involved. It is the Father that both issues the light of his glory and

also speaks.

In the Desire of Ages, the book which is said to teach the Trinity, it also says basically the same thing!

The Saviour's glance seems to penetrate heaven as He pours out His soul in prayer. Well He knows how sin has hardened the hearts of men, and how difficult it will be for them to discern His mission, and accept the gift of salvation. He pleads with the Father for power to overcome their unbelief, to break the fetters with which Satan has enthralled them, and in their behalf to conquer the destroyer. He asks for the witness that God accepts humanity in the person of His Son. {DA 111.6}

Never before have the angels listened to such a prayer. They are eager to bear to their loved Commander a message of assurance and comfort. But no; **the Father Himself will answer the petition of His Son. Direct from the throne issue the beams of His glory.** The heavens are opened, and upon the Saviour's head descends a dovelike form of purest light,—fit emblem of Him, the meek and lowly One. {DA 112.1}

Of the vast throng at the Jordan, few except John discerned the heavenly vision. Yet the solemnity of the divine Presence rested upon the assembly. The people stood silently gazing upon Christ. His form was bathed in **the light that ever surrounds the throne of God.** His upturned face was glorified as they had never before seen the face of man. From the open heavens a voice was heard saying, **“This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.”** {DA 112.2}

These words of confirmation were given to inspire faith in those who witnessed the scene, and to strengthen the Saviour for His mission. Notwithstanding that the sins of a guilty world were laid upon Christ, notwithstanding the humiliation of taking upon Himself our fallen nature, **the voice from heaven declared Him to be the Son of the Eternal.** {DA 112.3}

Again, it is directly from the Father, from the throne of God, that the light of His glory comes and it takes the form of a dove like burnished gold. It is also the Father's voice that announces who Christ really is. With His own voice He assures His own Son that He really is God's Son! Thus the Father is actually doing all of the manifestations. There is no Trinity in this description. Instead, Jesus is declared to be the Son of the Eternal. Eternal is capitalized meaning it is the Father. So, Jesus is the Son of the Eternal God!

A few pages later in the Desire of Ages, something else is said. Again it is in the same book which is said to teach the Trinity. Again it says the same thing!

At the Saviour's baptism, Satan was among the witnesses. **He saw the Father's glory overshadowing His Son. He heard the voice of Jehovah testifying to the divinity of Jesus.** Ever since Adam's sin, the human race had been cut off from direct communion with God; the intercourse between heaven and earth had been through Christ; but now that Jesus had come “in the likeness of sinful flesh” (Romans 8:3), the Father Himself spoke. He had before communicated with humanity through Christ; now He communicated with humanity in Christ. Satan had hoped that God's abhorrence of evil would bring an eternal separation between heaven and earth. But now it was manifest that the connection between God and man had been restored. {DA 116.2}

Satan himself saw the glory of the Father overshadow Jesus, the Son of God. Again, it is not some third person called the holy spirit, but it is actually the glory of the Father! So, Satan both saw the glory of God overshadowing Jesus and also heard The Father Himself testify that Jesus is divine.

Christ breaths on His Disciples His Holy Spirit

Here is an interesting experience the disciples had with Jesus. To begin with, let's quickly look at the verse that Mrs. White is referring to in the next group of quotes:

21 So Jesus said to them again, "Peace to you! As the Father has sent Me, I also send you."

22 And when He had said this, **He breathed on them**, and said to them, "**Receive the Holy Spirit**. John 20:21-22

Jesus breathed on His disciples and they received the Holy Spirit. This verse clearly shows that the Spirit comes from the Son.

"And when He had said this, **He breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost:** Whosoever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; and whosoever sins ye retain, they are retained." The Holy Spirit was not yet fully manifested; for Christ had not yet been glorified. The more abundant impartation of the Spirit did not take place till after Christ's ascension. Not until this was received could the disciples fulfill the commission to preach the gospel to the world. But the Spirit was now given for a special purpose. Before the disciples could fulfill their official duties in connection with the church, **Christ breathed His Spirit upon them**. He was committing to them a most sacred trust, and He desired to impress them with the fact that without the Holy Spirit this work could not be accomplished. {DA 805.2}

The Holy Spirit is the breath of spiritual life in the soul. **The impartation of the Spirit is the impartation of the life of Christ**. It imbues the receiver with the attributes of Christ. Only those who are thus taught of God, those who possess the inward working of the Spirit, and in whose life the Christ-life is manifested, are to stand as representative men, to minister in behalf of the church. {DA 805.3}

The Holy Spirit proceeds from the only begotten Son of God:

By his obedience to all the commandments of God, Christ wrought out a redemption for man. This was not done by going out of himself to another, but by taking humanity into himself. **Thus Christ gave to humanity an existence out of himself**. To bring humanity into Christ, to bring the fallen race into oneness with divinity, is the work of redemption. **Christ took human nature that men might be one with him as he is one with the Father, that God may love man as he loves his only begotten Son**, that men may be partakers of the divine nature, and be complete in him. {RH, April 5, 1906 par. 15}

The Holy Spirit, which proceeds from the only begotten Son of God, binds the human agent, body, soul, and spirit, **to the perfect, divine-human nature of Christ**. This union is represented by the union of the vine and the branches. Finite man is united to the manhood of Christ. Through faith human nature **is assimilated with Christ's nature**. We are made one with God in Christ. {RH, April 5, 1906 par. 16}

Jesus is willing to breathe upon us His Holy Spirit as well:

If we are taught of God, we shall pray in conformity to His revealed will, and in submission to His will which we know not. We are to make supplication according to the will of God, relying on the precious Word, and believing that Christ not only gave Himself for but to His disciples. The record declares, "He breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost" (John 20:22). {YRP 26.3}

Jesus is waiting to breathe upon all His disciples, and give them the inspiration of His sanctifying Spirit, and transfuse the vital influence from Himself to His people. He would have them understand that henceforth they cannot serve two masters. Their lives cannot be divided. Christ is to live in His human agents, and work through their faculties, and act through their capabilities. Their will must be submitted to His will, **they must act with His Spirit** that it may be no more they that live, **but Christ that liveth in them**. Jesus is seeking to impress upon them the thought that in giving **His Holy Spirit He is giving to them the glory which the Father has given Him**, that He and His people may be one in God. Our way and will must be in submission to God's will, knowing that it is holy, just, and good.--Signs of the Times, Oct. 3, 1892. par. 4 {YRP 26.4}

Notice where the Holy Spirit comes from when the disciples receive Christ's Spirit. Jesus breathes on them the Holy Spirit. Thus Jesus is able to give us what His Father gave Him. This is the same truth we saw in the

Bible concerning the Holy Spirit.

All who consecrate soul, body, and spirit to God will be constantly receiving a new endowment of physical and mental power. The inexhaustible supplies of heaven are at their command. **Christ gives them the breath of His own spirit, the life of His own life.** The Holy Spirit puts forth its highest energies to work in heart and mind. The grace of God enlarges and multiplies their faculties, and every perfection of the divine nature comes to their assistance in the work of saving souls. Through co-operation with Christ they are complete in Him, and in their human weakness they are enabled to do the deeds of Omnipotence. {DA 827.3}

When Christ breathes on us, He gives us His own Spirit, the life of His own life!

Saith the Lord: “My people shall never be ashamed.” Joel 2:26. “Weeping may endure for a night, but joy cometh in the morning.” Psalm 30:5. When on His resurrection day these disciples met the Saviour, and their hearts burned within them as they listened to His words; when they looked upon the head and hands and feet that had been bruised for them; when, before His ascension, Jesus led them out as far as Bethany, and lifting up His hands in blessing, bade them, “Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel,” adding, “**Lo, I am with you always**” (Mark 16:15; Matthew 28:20); **when on the Day of Pentecost the promised Comforter descended and the power from on high was given and the souls of the believers thrilled with the conscious presence of their ascended Lord**--then, even though, like His, their pathway led through sacrifice and martyrdom, would they have exchanged the ministry of the gospel of His grace, with the “crown of righteousness” to be received at His coming, for the glory of an earthly throne, which had been the hope of their earlier discipleship? He who is “able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think,” had granted them, with the fellowship of His sufferings, the communion of His joy--the joy of “bringing many sons unto glory,” joy unspeakable, an “eternal weight of glory,” to which, says Paul, “our light affliction, which is but for a moment,” is “not worthy to be compared.” {GC 350.1}

We can have Christ’s Spirit with us as an ever-present Help

The same help that Jesus had, we can have:

The Father’s presence encircled Christ, and nothing befell Him but that which infinite love permitted for the blessing of the world. **Here was His source of comfort, and it is for us. He who is imbued with the Spirit of Christ abides in Christ.** The blow that is aimed at him falls upon the Saviour, who surrounds him with His presence. Whatever comes to him comes from Christ. He has no need to resist evil, for Christ is his defense. **Nothing can touch him except by our Lord’s permission, and “all things” that are permitted “work together for good to them that love God.** Romans 8:28. Thoughts from the Mount of Blessing, p. 71 (1896)

The Father’s presence encircled Christ. This was Jesus’ source of comfort. We can now have that same presence, except that it is now the presence of Christ that encircles around us! It is for us and His presence is our source of comfort.

Satan is on your track. He is an artful opponent, and the malignant spirit which you meet in your work is inspired by him. Those whom he controls echo his words. If the veil could be rent away from their eyes, those thus worked would see Satan plying all his arts to win them from the truth. In rescuing souls from his devices, **far more will be accomplished by Christlike, humble prayer** than by many words without prayer. {MC 40.1}

The workers should keep the soul constantly uplifted to God in prayer. **They are never alone.** If they have faith in God, if they realize that to them is committed the work of giving to the people light on Bible subjects, **they constantly enjoy the companionship of Christ.** {MC 40.2}

The Lord Jesus standing by the side of the canvassers, walking with them, is the chief worker. If we recognize Christ as the One who is with us to prepare the way, the Holy Spirit by our side will make impressions in just the lines needed. {Manual for Canvassers - MC 40.3}

So, who is by our side? It is the Holy Spirit that is by our side. The Holy Spirit is Christ! He is the chief worker by our side and if we recognize that it is Christ who is the One beside us, He will prepare the way and make impressions in just the lines needed! This language is very clear that it is Christ who is the Holy Spirit.

Here is a special experience that Mrs. White had:

Friday, March 20, I arose early, about half past three o'clock in the morning. While writing upon the fifteenth chapter of John, **suddenly a wonderful peace came upon me.** The whole room seemed to be filled with the atmosphere of heaven. A holy, sacred presence seemed to be in my room. I laid down my pen and was in a waiting attitude **to see what the Spirit would say unto me.** I saw no person. I heard no audible voice, but a heavenly watcher seemed close beside me. **I felt that I was in the presence of Jesus.** The sweet peace and light which seemed to be in my room it is impossible for me to explain or describe. A sacred, holy atmosphere surrounded me, and there were presented to me mind and understanding matters of intense interest and importance. **A line of action was laid out before me as if the unseen presence was speaking with me.** Manuscript Releases Vol. 11, p. 326. (1896)

Here is another indication what it was like for Mrs. White to receive messages from Jesus:

I arose early Thursday morning, about two o'clock, and was writing busily upon the *True Vine*, when I felt a presence in my room, as I have many times before, and I lost all recollection of what I was about. **I seemed to be in the presence of Jesus. He was communicating to me that in which I was to be instructed.** Everything was so plain that I could not misunderstand. . . Not an audible word was spoken to my ear, but to my mind. I said, **"Lord, I will do as Thou hast commanded."** Manuscript Releases Vol. 5, p. 147. (1896)

In a special way Jesus came to Mrs. White but He will also make His abode with us:

By **the Spirit the Father and the Son** will come and make their abode with you. The Bible Echo, Jan. 15, 1893 par. 8

It is through the Spirit that the Father and Son come to live with us!

Jesus in the Sanctuary and also with us by His Spirit

Even while Jesus acts as our High Priest to plead before God the merits of His own precious blood, He is also with us. His followers will sense His presence with them.

When Christ ascended to heaven, **the sense of His presence was still with His followers. It was a personal presence, full of love and light.** Jesus, the Saviour, who had walked and talked and prayed with them, who had spoken hope and comfort to their hearts, had, while the message of peace was still upon His lips, been taken up from them into heaven, and the tones of His voice had come back to them, as the cloud of angels received Him--"Lo, I am with you **always, even unto the end of the world.**" Matthew 28:20. He had ascended to heaven in the form of humanity. They knew that **He was before the throne of God,** their Friend and Saviour still; that His sympathies were unchanged; that He was still identified with suffering humanity. **He was presenting before God the merits of His own precious blood, showing His wounded hands and feet, in remembrance of the price He had paid for His redeemed.** They knew that He had ascended to heaven to

prepare places for them, and that He would come again and take them to Himself. {SC 73.2}

As they met together after the ascension they were eager to present their requests to the Father in the name of Jesus. In solemn awe they bowed in prayer, repeating the assurance, “Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in My name, He will give it you. Hitherto have ye asked nothing in My name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full.” John 16:23, 24. They extended the hand of faith higher and higher with the mighty argument, “It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.” Romans 8:34. And Pentecost brought them the presence of the Comforter, of whom Christ had said, He “shall be in you.” And He had further said, “It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send Him unto you.” John 14:17; 16:7. **Henceforth through the Spirit, Christ was to abide continually in the hearts of His children.** Their union with Him was closer than when He was personally with them. The light, and love, and power of the indwelling Christ shone out through them, so that men, beholding, “marveled; and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus.” Acts 4:13. {SC 74.1}

Christ’s physical presence is in the Sanctuary in heaven, yet through the Holy Spirit He is with us:

“Wherefore He is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by Him, seeing He ever liveth to make intercession for them.” Hebrews 7:25. Though the ministration was to be removed from the earthly to the heavenly temple; though the sanctuary and our great high priest would be invisible to human sight, yet the disciples were to suffer no loss thereby. They would realize no break in their communion, and no diminution of power because of the Saviour’s absence. **While Jesus ministers in the sanctuary above, He is still by His Spirit the minister of the church on earth. He is withdrawn from the eye of sense, but His parting promise is fulfilled, “Lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world.”** Matthew 28:20. While He delegates His power to inferior ministers, **His energizing presence is still with His church.** {DA 166.2}

“Seeing then that we have a great high priest, . . . Jesus, the Son of God, let us hold fast our profession. For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin. Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.” Hebrews 4:14-16. {DA 166.3}

So, Christ has a double mission, He is interceding in our behalf in the heavenly sanctuary and He, through the Holy Spirit, is also with us leading to Himself.

The Spirit was given as a regenerating agency, and without this the sacrifice of Christ would have been of no avail. The power of evil had been strengthening for centuries, and the submission of man to this satanic captivity was amazing. Sin could be resisted and overcome only **through the mighty agency of the third person of the Godhead**, who would come with no modified energy, but in the fulness of divine power. It is the Spirit that makes effectual what has been wrought out by the world’s Redeemer. **It is by the Spirit that the heart is made pure. Through the Spirit the believer becomes a partaker of the divine nature. Christ has given his Spirit as a divine power to overcome all hereditary and cultivated tendencies to evil, and to impress his own character upon the church.** Review and Herald, May 19, 1904 par. 3

It is through Christ’s spirit that He purifies our heart. It is through the Spirit that we can be a partaker of the divine nature so that we can overcome all hereditary and cultivated tendencies to evil.

In giving us **His Spirit, God gives us Himself**, making Himself a fountain of divine influences, to give health and life to the world. Testimonies V7, p. 273 (1902)

In all these descriptions of how our God and Jesus are working to save us, there is no mention of an actual third person of the Godhead. But rather, the third person is actually the Spirit of Christ which God the Father had given to Him. Thus it is also the Spirit of God.

A few extra Quotes

The influence of the Holy Spirit is the life of Christ in the soul. Manuscript Releases Volume 4, p. 332.

The life of Christ can be in us! It is the life of Christ in our soul.

The teacher must be baptized with the Holy Spirit. Then the mind and spirit of Christ will be in him, and he will confess Christ in a spiritual and holy life. Review and Herald, Feb 9, 1892 par. 21

With His own voice He assures His own Son that He really is God's Son!

What did the Early Pioneers believe the Holy Spirit to be?

The Holy Spirit is the Spirit of God; it is also the Spirit of Christ. {U. Smith, GC Daily Bulletin Vol. 4, March 14, 1891, pp. 146-147}

Here we find that the Holy Spirit is both the Spirit of God and the Spirit of Christ. {E.J. Waggoner, Christ and His Righteousness, p. 23, 1890}

We learn from this language that when we speak of the Spirit of God we are really speaking of his presence and power. {J.N. Loughborough, Review & Herald, Sept. 13, 1898}

Is the presence and power of God a different person from God? No. Where did Loughborough and the others get their information from?

6. Spirit of Prophecy quotes that are used by some to teach the Trinity teaching

We will now begin to study the quotes from Mrs. White that the church uses to teach the Trinity doctrine to Adventist members. But as we look into these things, I believe you are going to discover that right along with these quotes that are said to support the Trinity; There are many other quotes that are actually anti-trinitarian and they definitely agree with the truth about God and His Son. Many times these other statements are found near by or even on the same page as the “Trinity statements”. Yet these quotes, which outrightly support the truth about the Father and His Son, are ignored!

You are also going to discover that these same “Trinity statements” which the church uses to teach trinitarian concepts, they also agree with the truth about God and His Son. What is being done is that the church is using it’s own definitions for her words. Thus they apply trinitarian concepts to her words! As we will find out; Mrs. White herself defines her own words in other places in her own writings. When we apply her own understanding to her words and concepts we will find that she never does teach trinitarian concepts. She continued until her death to teach the same truth about the Father and His only begotten Son.

Because these same statements can be argued either way, they are really poor arguments on the part of church leadership in trying to convince the laity of the church. However, because most people do not study sufficiently for themselves and because of the faith of the church members in Mrs. White, it has been a good strategy, so far, on their part to convince the people that this error is truth.

The evidence we will look at, I believe, will help to show that Mrs. White never did change her mind on who God is.

The Desire of Ages

Initially, the leaders tried to say that our church was battling with this question who God is from the beginning. {LeRoy Froom - look up} But this position has become so untenable because it was eventually shown to be an outright dishonest position. The historical sources just would not allow them to continue with that strategy. When Froom would quote Mrs. White for example, he would just not quote the part that went against his position. The dishonesty became so evident that various theologians of the church began to back off from this approach.

Then they came to a new position. One that they thought they could support. They began to teach that Mrs. White changed her mind on the Trinity issue when she wrote her book: *Desire of Ages*. They either taught that she change her mind or that she came out in the open at this point in time. Jerry Moon calls it “the continental divide for the Adventist understanding of the Trinity.” {*The Adventist Trinity Debate* by Jerry A. Moon, *Andrews University Seminary Studies*, Vol. 41, No. 1, p. 113-129 (2003)}

In Moon’s article, he uses various statements to show, from his perspective, how Mrs. White progressed and slowly changed her position toward the Trinity doctrine even before *The Desire of Ages* was written. In the following EGW quotes, the **Green text** will be the text Moon and others use to show that Mrs. White is moving on toward trinitarianism. While the **Red text** are portions of the text which promotes the idea that Mrs. White never did change her position. Here are a few of these kind of statements. (We will be looking at the best of the quotes that they have to show she was moving toward a trinitarian viewpoint.)

1 - From the Days of Eternity

Moon says about this first quote: “Beginning with the first paragraph of the book, she called into question the dominant view of early Adventists regarding the relationship of Christ to the Father.” {*The Adventist Trinity Debate* by Jerry A. Moon, *Andrews University Seminary Studies*, Vol. 41, No. 1, p. 113-129 (2003)} What Moon is referring to is this statement:

"From the days of eternity the Lord Jesus Christ was one with the Father;" {DA 19.1}

This quote is believed to support the idea of an eternal self-existent Son who became Jesus. Thus He is thought to be the eternal Son of God, in union and oneness with His Father. {*The Adventist Trinity Debate* by Jerry A. Moon, *Andrews University Seminary Studies*, Vol. 41, No. 1, p. 113-129 (2003)} So Moon uses this quote to say that Jesus, the Son of God has no beginning, that He always existed. Here's the full paragraph:

“His name shall be called Immanuel, . . . God with us.” “The light of the knowledge of the glory of God” is seen “in the face of Jesus Christ.” **From the days of eternity the Lord Jesus Christ was one with the Father;** He was **“the image of God,” the image of His greatness and majesty, “the outshining of His glory.”** It was to manifest this glory that He came to our world. To this sin-darkened earth He came to reveal the light of God's love,--to be **“God with us.”** Therefore it was prophesied of Him, “His name shall be called **Immanuel.**” {DA 19.1}

Moon and others believe this statement is saying that the Son of God has always existed with the Father and that He never was begotten from His Father. Obviously, if Mrs. White thought that, she would have changed her mind. However, if this idea were true, we should expect all of her new quotes to reflect this change. However, above in the same quote above, there are phrases which indicate that Jesus is the image of God, the image of His greatness and majesty, the outshining of His glory. These phrases show that Jesus was in the image of God. In other words, He came from God.

Also, just three pages later, we read this:

. . . God did not ordain that sin should exist, but He foresaw its existence, and made provision to meet the terrible emergency. So great was His love for the world, **that He covenanted to give His only-begotten Son,** “that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life.” John 3:16. {DA 22.2}

So God loved us so much that He decided to give us His only-begotten Son that we might have everlasting life! Here we see that Mrs. White is still saying that Jesus is the only-begotten Son of God. It should be clear that Mrs. White has not changed her mind. She believed that Jesus is the only-begotten Son of God.

On top of all this, Moon concedes that there were others in the church who used similar language yet they did not believe that Christ always existed without beginning. Thus Moon concedes that this quote can be taken either way. {*The Adventist Trinity Debate* by Jerry A. Moon, *Andrews University Seminary Studies*, Vol. 41, No. 1, p. 113-129 (2003)}

But let's look into what Mrs. White really meant.

Here Christ shows them that, although they might reckon His life to be less than fifty years, **yet His divine life could not be reckoned by human computation.** The existence of Christ before His incarnation is **not**

measured by figures. {ST, May 3, 1899 par. 4}

This terrible ordeal was imposed upon Abraham that he might see the day of Christ, and realize the great love of God for the world, so great that, to raise it from its degradation, **He gave His only-begotten Son** to a most shameful death. {ST, May 3, 1899 par. 9}

So, Christ is the only-begotten Son of God, but his birth is so far back that it cannot be reckoned by human computation. It is not measured by figures. This does not mean that the Son has always existed, but that His birth was so far back that we would find it too difficult to fathom. EJ Waggoner explained it this way:

It is true that there are many sons of God; **but Christ is the “only begotten Son of God,”** and therefore the Son of God in a sense in which no other being ever was or ever can be. The angels are sons of God, as was Adam (Job 38:7; Luke 3:38), by creation; Christians are the sons of God by adoption (Rom. 8:14, 15); **but Christ is the Son of God by birth.** . . . {*Christ and His Righteousness* by EJ Waggoner (1890) Page 12}

The Scriptures declare **that Christ is “the only begotten son of God.” He is begotten, not created.** As to when He was begotten, it is not for us to inquire, nor could our minds grasp it if we were told. The prophet Micah tells us all that we can know about it, in these words: “But thou, Bethlehem Ephratah, though thou be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of thee shall He come forth unto Me that is to be ruler in Israel; whose goings forth have been from of old, **from the days of eternity.**” Micah 5:2, margin. **There was a time when Christ proceeded forth and came from God, from the bosom of the Father (John 8:42; 1:18), but that time was so far back in the days of eternity that to finite comprehension it is practically without beginning.** {*Christ and His Righteousness* by EJ Waggoner (1890) Page 19}

2 - In Christ is life, original, unborrowed, underived

But the life of Christ was unborrowed. No one can take this life from Him. “I lay it down of Myself.” (John 10:18), **He said. In Him was life, original, unborrowed, underived.** {1 *Selected Messages* p. 296. Citing *The Signs of the Times*, April 8, 1897}

In Christ is life, original, unborrowed, underived. “He that hath the Son hath life.” 1 John 5:12. **The divinity of Christ is the believer’s assurance of eternal life.** {DA 530.3}

From these two quotes it is stated that Mrs. White says Christ is self-existent” and that His Deity is not “derived” from the Father. The following is Moon’s explanation:

“Christ didn’t ultimately derive his divine life from the Father. As a man on earth, he subordinated his will to the will of the Father (John 5:19, 30), but as self-existent God, he had power to lay down his life and take it up again. Thus in commenting on Christ’s resurrection, Ellen White again asserted his full deity and equality with the Father, declaring ‘The Saviour came forth from the grave by the life that was in Himself.’” {*The Adventist Trinity Debate* by Jerry A. Moon, *Andrews University Seminary Studies*, Vol. 41, No. 1, p. 113-129 (2003)}

Moon and others say that this is the statement that changed the beliefs of Adventists from what they term “semi-arian” to being trinitarian. ML Andreasen is usually cited because, as he says, this statement came as a shock to him. He was sure that Sister White really didn’t write: “In Christ is life, original, unborrowed, underived” In his sermon he talks about visiting Mrs. White and looking at the documents to find that she really did write this expression. He found it in Mrs. White’s handwriting.

As we are now going to discover, this special life that we can receive, this unborrowed life, actually comes to us from the Father. But it is given to us through His Son. This is because the Son of God has also received His unborrowed life from His Father. So in His intermediary position, He gives to us what He has received from His Father.

All Life comes from the Father through the Son

We can only come to God through the Son:

6 Jesus said to him, I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life; no one comes to the Father but by Me. John 14:6

The things we receive from the Father, come through the Son.

“And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.” Christ came to the world to reveal the character of the Father, and to redeem the fallen race. **The world’s Redeemer was equal with God. His authority was as the authority of God. He declared that he had no existence separate from the Father.** The authority by which he spoke, and wrought miracles, was expressly his own, **yet he assures us that he and the Father are one.** John bore witness of Christ, and pointed all men to him as the promised Messiah. When he beheld Jesus before him, he declared, “Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world. This is he of whom I said, After me cometh a man which is preferred before me; for he was before me.” “And of his fullness have we all received, and grace for grace. For the law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ. No man hath seen God at any time; **the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father,** he hath declared him.” {RH, January 7, 1890 par. 1}

The Father and the Son were equal yet we see that Christ is the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father. Christ has no existence separate from the Father. It is interesting to note that Mrs. White never says that the Father had no existence separate from the Son. Obviously the Father has always existed and the Son is the only begotten Son of God. He came later.

The Son lives because of the Father.

57 “As the living Father sent Me, and **I live because of the Father,** so he who feeds on Me will live because of Me. John 6:57 NKJV

We will live because of Jesus since Jesus has also received life from His Father.

26 “For as the Father has life in Himself, so **He has granted the Son to have life in Himself,** John 5:26

The Father has life in Himself and He also granted the Son that He will also have life in Himself. So, Christ also has life, original, unborrowed, underived. It was a gift from His Father.

In Christ, divinity and humanity were combined. Divinity was not degraded to humanity; divinity held its place, but humanity by being united to divinity, withstood the fiercest test of temptation in the wilderness. The prince of this world came to Christ after his long fast, when he was an hungered, and suggested to him to command the stones to become bread. But the plan of God, devised for the salvation of man, provided that Christ should know hunger, and poverty, and every phase of man’s experience. He withstood the temptation, through the power that man may command. He laid hold on the throne of God, and there is not a man or woman who may not have access to the same help through faith in God. **Man may become a partaker of the divine nature; not a soul lives who may not summon the aid of Heaven in temptation and trial. Christ came to**

reveal the Source of his power, that man might never rely on his unaided human capabilities. {RH, February 18, 1890 par. 7}

Since Christ came to reveal the Source of His power, that means His source of power was his Father even before He came to earth. After all that is one of the reasons why He came. He came to reveal His source of His power.

So, what is the Source of Christ's power, even before He became a man? It is the Father from whom all blessing flow. It is the Father who granted the Son to have life in Himself. Thus the Son lives because of the Father.

But turning from all lesser representations, we behold God in Jesus. Looking unto Jesus we see that it is the glory of our God to give. "I do nothing of Myself," said Christ; "**the living Father hath sent Me, and I live by the Father.**" "I seek not Mine own glory," but the glory of Him that sent Me. John 8:28; 6:57; 8:50; 7:18. In these words is set forth the great principle which is the law of life for the universe. **All things Christ received from God, but He took to give.** So in the heavenly courts, in His ministry for all created beings: **through the beloved Son, the Father's life flows out to all**; through the Son it returns, in praise and joyous service, a tide of love, to **the great Source of all**. And thus through Christ the circuit of beneficence is complete, representing the character of the great Giver, the law of life. {DA 21.2} NOTE: The father's original, unborrowed, underived life is in His Son.

The Son lives by the Father. All the things that we receive from God, we get through His Son. Thus the Father's life flows out to all of us through His Son. That means the life that the Son has, comes from His Father. That is what flows to us.

In Christ is life, original, unborrowed, underived. "He that hath the Son hath life." 1 John 5:12. **The divinity of Christ is the believer's assurance of eternal life.** {DA 530.3}

So, Christ receives this life from the Source of all life. The Father's life is original, unborrowed and underived. It is His life which He gives to His Son and the Son then gives it to the rest of us.

In Christ the cry of humanity reached the Father of infinite pity. As a man He supplicated the throne of God till His humanity was charged with a heavenly current that should connect humanity with divinity. **Through continual communion He received life from God, that He might impart life to the world.** His experience is to be ours. {DA 363.1}

Through continual communion with God the Son receives life from His Father that He can give it to us. This can be our example as well since He is our example.

God has sent his Son to communicate his own life to humanity. Christ declares, "I live by the Father," my life and his being one. "No man hath seen God at any time; **the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him,**" "For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself; and hath given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of Man." The head of every man is Christ, as the head of Christ is God. "And ye are Christ's, and Christ is God's." {HM, June 1, 1897 par. 11}

God sent his Son to communicate his own life to humanity. So it is the Father's life which is God's own life that is given to us through his Son.

In him was life; and the life was the light of men. John 1:4 It is not physical life that is here specified, but immortality, the life which is exclusively the property of God. The Word, who was with God, and who was God, has this life. Physical life is something which each individual receives. It is not eternal or immortal; for God, the life-giver, takes it again. Man has no control over his life. **But the life of Christ was unborrowed. No one can take this life from Him. "I lay it down of myself" John 10:18, He said. In Him was life, original, unborrowed, underived. This life is not inherent in man. He can possess it only through Christ. He cannot earn it; it is given him as a free gift** if he will believe in Christ as His personal Saviour. "This is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus CHrist, whom thou hast sent" John 17:3. This is the open fountain of life for the world. *The Signs of the Times*, April 8, 1897. Quoted in 1 Selected Messages, pp. 296-297. NOTE: Original, unborrowed underived life can be given! **NOTE: Look in the next Chapter.**

So, it is through Christ that we can have God's original, unborrowed, underived life. It is an amazing thing but this special life, this original, unborrowed underived life can be given! Thus we can possess this same original, unborrowed, underived life.

From Jesus is our life derived. **In him is life that is original,--unborrowed, underived life. In him is the fountain of life. In us there is a streamlet from the fountain of life.** Our life is something that we receive, something that the Giver takes back again to himself. If our life is hid with Christ in God, we shall, when Christ shall appear, also appear with him in glory. And while in this world, we shall give to God, in sanctified service, all the capabilities he has given us. . . . {RH, August 6, 1914 par. 1}

We receive only a streamlet of the fountain of life while Christ possesses the full fountain of life. Yet we are able to possess a streamlet of this same original, unborrowed, underived life. It does not matter that it does not originate with us. It is that same life which originates from God and passed on to us through Christ. Thus this life does not have to originate with Christ for Him to possess it.

3 - The mighty agency of the third person of the godhead

The Holy Spirit was the highest of all gifts that He could solicit from His Father for the exaltation of His people. The Spirit was to be given as a regenerating agent, and without this the sacrifice of Christ would have been of no avail. The power of evil had been strengthening for centuries and the submission of men to this satanic captivity was amazing. Sin could be resisted and overcome only through **the mighty agency of the Third Person of the Godhead**, who would come with no modified energy, but in the fullness of divine power. Desire of Ages p. 671.2 **NOTE: Capitals not in original book but was changed in the newer reprint.**

While Moon and others are trying to say Mrs. White believed in the Trinity, that she believed the Holy Spirit was actually the third person of the godhead in a Trinity sense; On the other hand, if we only start reading more of Mrs. Whites' work, we will realize that there should be no question that she believed the Holy Spirit is actually the Spirit of Christ omnipresence.

It is not essential for you to know and be able to define just what the Holy Spirit is. Christ tells us that the Holy Spirit is the Comforter, and the Comforter is the Holy Ghost, "the Spirit of truth, which the Father shall send in My name." **"I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you for ever; even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth Him not, neither knoweth Him: but ye know Him, for He dwelleth with you, and shall be in you"** [John 14:16, 17]. **This refers to the omnipresence of the Spirit of Christ, called the Comforter.** Again Jesus says, "I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. Howbeit when He, the Spirit of truth is come, He will guide you into all truth" [John 16:12, 13]. {14MR 179.2 (1891)}

John 14 is often used to help convince Adventists that Jesus was promising another Comforter, in other words, someone else, a third person. Yet here we have Mrs. White quoting this very verse and saying: **“This refers to the omnipresence of the Spirit of Christ, called the Comforter”**.

While Mrs. White says that the Holy Spirit is the omnipresence of the Spirit of Christ she also says that it is not essential for us to be able to define just what the Holy Spirit is. What she did say was that the Holy Ghost is the Holy Spirit which is also the Comforter, the Spirit of truth, and also the omnipresence of the Spirit of Christ. The Holy Spirit is all of these.

Mrs. White also made statements like the following:

Cumbered with humanity, Christ could not be in every place personally; therefore it was altogether for their advantage that He should leave them, go to His father, and send the Holy Spirit to be His successor on earth. **The Holy Spirit is Himself divested of the personality of humanity and independent thereof.** He would represent **Himself as present** in all places **by His Holy Spirit, as the Omnipresent**. “But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in My name, He shall (although unseen by you), [THIS PHRASE WAS ADDED BY ELLEN WHITE.] teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you” [John 14:26]. “Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will come not unto you; but if I depart, I will send Him unto you” [John 16:7]. {14MR 23.3}

Jesus, with his human body could not be in every place at the same time. But he could be with us by His Holy Spirit, which is His Omnipresence. The Holy Spirit is Christ but without His humanity.

The Holy Spirit is Christ’s representative, **but divested of the personality of humanity, and independent thereof.** **Cumbered with humanity**, Christ could not be in every place personally. Therefore it was for their interest that He should go to the Father, and send the Spirit to be His successor on earth. No one could then have any advantage because of his location or his personal contact with Christ. By the Spirit the Saviour would be accessible to all. In this sense **He would be nearer to them than if He had not ascended on high**. {Desire of Ages - DA 669.2}

The word: “divested” means “stripped of” or “free from” or even “disassociated from”. So Jesus is with us but without his human form getting into the way. He can now be closer to us than if He was here in person, in His human form. This can only be if the Holy Spirit is actually Christ Himself!

Please note how many of these statements are from the actual book *Desire of Ages* itself. If Mrs. White was changing her viewpoint, wouldn’t she make sure the whole book was in agreement with the new “truth”? These other statements are united in describing the Holy Spirit as the Omnipresent Spirit of Christ.

“He that loveth Me shall be loved of My Father, and I will love him, and will manifest Myself to him.” Jesus read the future of His disciples. He saw one brought to the scaffold, one to the cross, one to exile among the lonely rocks of the sea, others to persecution and death. **He encouraged them with the promise that in every trial He would be with them.** That promise has lost none of its force. The Lord knows all about His faithful servants who for His sake are lying in prison or who are banished to lonely islands. He comforts them **with His own presence**. When for the truth’s sake the believer stands at the bar of unrighteous tribunals, **Christ stands by his side**. All the reproaches that fall upon him, fall upon Christ. Christ is condemned over again in the person of His disciple. When one is incarcerated in prison walls, Christ ravishes the heart with His love. When one suffers death for His sake, Christ says, “I am He that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive forevermore, . . . and have the keys of hell and of death.” Revelation 1:18. The life that is sacrificed for Me is preserved unto eternal glory. {Desire of Ages - DA 669.3}

Christ manifests Himself to us through the Spirit. He comforts us with His own presence since the Holy Spirit is the very presence of Christ. Thus, even when we are in prison cells or banished on lonely islands, Christ will still be standing by our side.

The disciples still failed to understand Christ's words **in their spiritual sense**, and again He explained His meaning. **By the Spirit, He said, He would manifest Himself to them.** "The Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in My name, He shall teach you all things." No more will you say, I cannot comprehend. No longer will you see through a glass, darkly. You shall "be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; and to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge." Ephesians 3:18, 19. {Desire of Ages - DA 670.1}

When Jesus went back to heaven, His physical presence would be in heaven. So it should be obvious that Christ would not be with us bodily with His human physical presence. He would be with us in a spiritual sense by His Spirit.

Though the ministration was to be removed from the earthly to the heavenly temple; though the sanctuary and our great high priest would be invisible to human sight, yet the disciples were to suffer no loss thereby. They would realize no break in their communion, and no diminution of power because of the Saviour's absence. **While Jesus ministers in the sanctuary above, He is still by His Spirit the minister of the church on earth.** He is withdrawn from the eye of sense, but His parting promise is fulfilled, "**Lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world.**" Matt. 28:20 While He delegates His power to inferior ministers, **His energizing presence is still with His church.** {Desire of Ages - DA 166.2}

While Jesus ministers as our high priest in the Heavenly Sanctuary, interceding in our behalf, He is still present with us by His Spirit. This is how He can be with us unto the end of the world.

Jesus did not seek to attract the people to Him by gratifying the desire for luxury. To that great throng, weary and hungry after the long, exciting day, the simple fare **was an assurance not only of His power, but of His tender care for them in the common needs of life.** The Saviour has not promised His followers the luxuries of the world; their fare may be plain, and even scanty; their lot may be shut in by poverty; but His word is pledged that their need shall be supplied, and He has promised that which is far better than worldly good,-- **the abiding comfort of His own presence.** {Desire of Ages - DA 367.2}

What has the Saviour promised us? He does not gratify us with luxury, or an easy life. But that our Saviour's presence would be with us. "Lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world." Matt. 28:20.

The reason why the churches are weak and sickly and ready to die, is that the enemy has brought influences of a discouraging nature to bear upon trembling souls. **He has sought to shut Jesus from their view as the Comforter**, as one who reproves, who warns, who admonishes them, saying, "This is the way, walk ye in it." Christ has all power in heaven and in earth, and he can strengthen the wavering, and set right the erring. He can inspire with confidence, with hope in God; and confidence in God always results in creating confidence in one another. {RH, August 26, 1890 par. 10}

The presence of our Saviour as our Comforter should be extremely important to us. This is why Satan has tried to get rid of the idea that Jesus is our Comforter today. This is why our churches are weak and sickly and ready to die! We will see more of this topic when we look at Mrs. White's warning of the Omega Apostasy.

Here are some more quotes. This is just to show you that these kind of statements are found all over the place and they are not early statements. Some were made by Mrs. White long after she wrote *The Desire of Ages*.

The work of the Holy Spirit is immeasurably great. It is from this source that power and efficiency come to the worker for God; **and the holy Spirit is the Comforter, as the personal presence of Christ** to the soul. He who looks to Christ in simple, child-like faith, is made a partaker of the divine nature through the agency of the Holy Spirit. . . {Home Missionary - HM, November 1, 1893 par. 28}

The Holy Spirit is the Comforter, the personal presence of Christ.

God will bless all who will thus prepare themselves for His service. They will understand what it means to have the assurance of the Spirit, because they have received Christ by faith. The religion of Christ means much more than the forgiveness of sin. It means taking away our sins, **and filling the vacuum with the Holy Spirit**. It means divine illumination, rejoicing in God. It means a heart emptied of self, **and blessed with the abiding presence of Christ**. We need the vital qualities of christianity, and when we possess them, the church will be a living, active, working church. There will be a growth in grace, because the bright rays of the Sun of righteousness pervade the chambers of the mind. {Bible Training School - BTS, October 1, 1908 par. 3}

We can have the abiding presence of Christ when we ask for the forgiveness of our sins.

. . . The righteous are represented as wondering what they have done for which they are to be so liberally rewarded. **They had had the abiding presence of Christ in their hearts; they had been imbued with his Spirit**, and without conscious effort on their part; they had been serving Christ in the person of his saints, and had thereby gained the sure reward. . . . {RH, July 3, 1894 par. 5}

Christ's presence is what gives us power:

God calls upon His people, many of whom are but half awake, to arouse, and engage in earnest labor, praying for strength for service. Workers are needed. **Receive the Holy Spirit, and your efforts will be successful. Christ's presence is what gives power.** {Central Advance, February 25, 1903 par. 7}

Not only will the presence of Christ be with us but also the Father will be with us:

The best recommendation you can carry with you of this school and its influence is a well-ordered life and a godly conversation. Wherever you may be, maintain the principles that you have been studying here. Wherever you go, carry on the good work of searching the Scriptures, and **the Lord Jesus will always be at your right hand to help you**. He is a merciful high priest pleading in your behalf. **He will send his representative, the Holy Spirit**; for He says, "I will not leave you comfortless; **I will come to you.**" **By the Spirit the Father and the Son will come and make their abode with you**. There is no excuse for wavering or sinning. {BEcho, January 15, 1893 par. 8}

We are to look up into the heavenly Sanctuary and Christ's ministration for us. This is so we can open our ears and rejoice in the light of Christ's presence.

. . . After His ascension He was to be **absent in person; but through the Comforter He would still be with them**, and they were not to spend their time in mourning. This was what Satan wanted. He desired them to give the world the impression that they had been deceived and disappointed; but by faith they were to look to the sanctuary above, where Jesus was ministering for them; they were to open their hearts to the Holy Spirit, His representative, **and to rejoice in the light of His presence**. . . . {Desire of Ages - DA 277.4}

Thus, when two or three come together in Christ's name, Jesus is in their midst:

"For where two or three are gathered together in My name, **I am there in the midst of them.**" Matthew 18:20

It is the love of God that He gave us Jesus the Comforter.

. . . As by faith we look to Jesus, our faith pierces the shadow, and we adore God for His wondrous love **in giving us Jesus the Comforter**. . . . {Sons and Daughters of God - SD 124.4}

. . . None will keep the law of God unless they love Him **who is the only begotten of the Father**. And none the less surely, if they love Him, will they express their love and obedience to Him. **All who love Christ will be loved of the Father, and He will manifest Himself to them. In all their emergencies and perplexities, they will have a helper in Jesus Christ**. {Southern Watchman - SW, September 13, 1898 par. 1}

That Christ should manifest Himself to them, and yet be invisible to the world, was a mystery to the disciples. They could not understand the words of Christ in their spiritual sense. They were thinking of the outward, visible manifestation. They could not take in the fact that **they could have the presence of Christ with them, and yet He be unseen by the world**. They did not understand the meaning of **a spiritual manifestation**. {Southern Watchman - SW, September 13, 1898 par. 2}

Our German and Danish and Swedish brethren have no good reason for not being able to act in harmony in the publishing work. Those who believe the truth should remember that they are God's little children, that they are under His training. Let them be thankful to God for His manifold mercies and be kind to one another. They have **one God and one Saviour; and one Spirit--the Spirit of Christ--**is to bring unity into their ranks. {9T 189.3}

. . . When on His resurrection day these disciples met the Saviour, and their hearts burned within them as they listened to His words; when they looked upon the head and hands and feet that had been bruised for them; when, before His ascension, Jesus led them out as far as Bethany, and lifting up His hands in blessing, bade them, "Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel," adding, "**Lo, I am with you always**" (Mark 16:15; Matthew 28:20); when on the Day of Pentecost the promised Comforter descended and the power from on high was given and the souls of the believers thrilled **with the conscious presence of their ascended Lord**--then, even though, like His, their pathway led through sacrifice and martyrdom, would they have exchanged the ministry of the gospel of His grace, with the "crown of righteousness" to be received at His coming, for the glory of an earthly throne, which had been the hope of their earlier discipleship? . . . {Great Controversy - GC 350.1}

Keep cheerful. **Do not forget that you have a Comforter, the Holy Spirit, which Christ has appointed.** You are never alone. If you will listen to the voice that now speaks to you, if you will respond without delay to the knocking at the door of your heart, "**Come in, Lord Jesus, that I may sup with Thee**, and Thee with me," the heavenly Guest will enter. When this element, which is all divine, abides with you, there is peace and rest. It is the kingdom of heaven come nigh unto you. {Daughters of God - DG 184.3}

What saith our Saviour? "I will not leave you comfortless: **I will come to you**." "He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father; and I will love him, **and will manifest myself to him**." When trials overshadow the soul, remember the words of Christ, remember that **He is an unseen presence in the person of the Holy Spirit**, and He will be the peace and comfort given you, manifesting to you that He is with you, the Sun of Righteousness, chasing away your darkness. . . . --Letter 124, 1897. {Daughters of God - DG 185.2}

So, Christ is an "unseen presence in the person of the Holy Spirit".

Dr. Kellogg's book "*The Living Temple*"

The very same arguments that Kellogg made in his time, is being heard today. After Kellogg wrote his book: "The Living Temple", he came to the conclusion that the Trinity would explain what he was saying. So he came to believe in the Trinity. Here is a letter by AG Daniels to WC White, Mrs. White's son:

Ever since the council closed I have felt that I should write you confidentially regarding Dr. Kellogg's plans for revising and republishing "The Living Temple" . . He [Kellogg] said that some days before coming to the council, he had been thinking the matter over, and began to see that he had made a slight mistake in expressing his views . . .

He then stated that his former views regarding the Trinity had stood in his way of making a clear and absolutely correct statement; but that within a short time **he had come to believe in the Trinity** and could now see pretty clearly where all the difficulty was, and believed that he could clear the matter up satisfactorily.

He told me that he now believed in God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost; and **his view was that it was God the Holy Ghost**, and not God the Father, **that filled all space, and every living thing**. He said if he had believed this before writing the book, he could have expressed his views without giving the wrong impression the book now gives.

I placed before him the objections I found in the teaching, and tried to show him that the teaching was so utterly contrary to the gospel that I did not see how it could be revised by changing a few expressions. {Letter: A.G. Daniels to W.C. White Oct. 29, 1903 pp. 1,2}

Now, in a letter to GI Butler the GC President, Kellogg says that in so many words, Mrs. White said that the Holy Ghost is the third person of the Godhead, as in the Trinity.

As far as I can fathom, the difficulty which is found in "The Living Temple", the whole thing may be simmered down to the question: **Is the Holy Ghost a person?** You say no. I had supposed the Bible said this for the reason that the personal pronoun "he" is used in speaking of the Holy Ghost. **Sister White uses the pronoun "he" and has said in so many words that the Holy Ghost is the third person of the Godhead. How the Holy Ghost can be the third person and not be a person at all is difficult for me to see.** {Letter: J.H. Kellogg to G.I. Butler, Oct. 28, 1903}

Mrs. White, however, did not agree with Kellogg that her writings supported the things

In the controversy that arose among our brethren regarding the teachings of this book, **those in favor of giving it a wide circulation declared: "It contains the very sentiments that Sister White has been teaching."** **This assertion struck right to my heart. I felt heartbroken; for I knew that this representation of the matter was not true.** {1SM 203.1}

Finally my son said to me, "Mother, you ought to read at least some parts of the book, that you may see whether they are in harmony with the light that God has given you." He sat down beside me, and together we read the preface, and most of the first chapter, and also paragraphs in other chapters. As we read, I recognized the very sentiments against which I had been bidden to speak in warning during the early days of my public labors. When I first left the State of Maine, it was to go through Vermont and Massachusetts, to bear a testimony against these sentiments. **Living Temple contains the alpha of these theories. I knew that the omega would follow in a little while; and I trembled for our people.** I knew that I must warn our brethren and sisters not to enter into controversy over the presence and personality of God. The statements made in Living Temple in regard to this point are incorrect. The scripture used to substantiate the doctrine there set forth, is scripture misapplied. {1SM 203.2}

I am compelled to speak in denial of the claim that the teachings of Living Temple can be sustained by statements from my writings. There may be in this book expressions and sentiments that are in harmony with my writings. And **there may be in my writings many statements which, taken from their connection, and**

interpreted according to the mind of the writer of Living Temple, would seem to be in harmony with the teachings of this book. This may give apparent support to the assertion that the sentiments in Living Temple are in harmony with my writings. **But God forbid that this sentiment should prevail.** {1SM 203.3}

This danger by Kellogg and the attack in our day, the alpha and the omega will be discussed in more detail later on in this

Statements like: Three Living Persons of the Heavenly Trio, Eternal Heavenly dignitaries, and Three Highest Powers in Heaven,

There is no dispute that there are Three Great Powers. The Bible clearly shows this. First we have the power of God:

16 For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ, for **it is the power of God** to salvation for everyone who believes, for the Jew first and also for the Greek. Romans 1:16

35 And the angel answered and said to her, “The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and **the power of the Highest** will overshadow you; therefore, also, that Holy One who is to be born will be called the Son of God. Luke 1:35

Christ is the power of God thus the power of our Lord Jesus Christ is also recognized.

24 but to those who are called, both Jews and Greeks, **Christ the power of God and the wisdom of God.** 1 Corinthians 1:24

4 In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when you are gathered together, along with my spirit, with **the power of our Lord Jesus Christ**, 1 Corinthians 5:4

Lastly we have the power of the Holy Spirit which is the power of the Spirit of God.

13 Now may the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that you may abound in hope by **the power of the Holy Spirit.** Romans 15:13

19 in mighty signs and wonders, by **the power of the Spirit of God**, so that from Jerusalem and round about to Illyricum I have fully preached the gospel of Christ. Romans 15:19

Mrs. White also identifies three: One God, one Saviour, and one Spirit. But she then makes special mention that the Spirit is the Spirit of Christ! This is an important point to note! (This is in 1909 much later than when Desire of Ages was put together.)

Our German and Danish and Swedish brethren have no good reason for not being able to act in harmony in the publishing work. Those who believe the truth should remember that they are God’s little children, that they are under His training. Let them be thankful to God for His manifold mercies and be kind to one another. They have **one God and one Saviour; and one Spirit--the Spirit of Christ--**is to bring unity into their ranks. {9T 189.3 (1909)}

Mrs. White in the Desire of Ages, says that Jesus is physically in the heavenly sanctuary. Yet it is through His Spirit, the Spirit of Christ that He ministers to the church on earth. We must not forget the promise Christ gave to us and His church in Matt. 28:20 which is found in the quote below:

Though the ministration was to be removed from the earthly to the heavenly temple; though the sanctuary and our great high priest would be invisible to human sight, yet the disciples were to suffer no loss thereby. They would realize no break in their communion, and no diminution of power because of the Saviour's absence. **While Jesus ministers in the sanctuary above, He is still by His Spirit the minister of the church on earth.** He is withdrawn from the eye of sense, but His parting promise is fulfilled, **"Lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world."** Matt. 28:20 While He delegates His power to inferior ministers, **His energizing presence is still with His church.** {Desire of Ages - DA 166.2 (1898)}

What people have done is to place a new interpretation to the various three powers statements and so they have people believe that Mrs. White is speaking of the Trinity.

The three powers or three persons she mentions as being the Father and Son, and the Spirit which is shared between both the Father and the Son.

Let them be thankful to God for His manifold mercies and be kind to one another. They have **one God and one Saviour**; and **one Spirit--the Spirit of Christ**--is to bring unity into their ranks. *Testimonies Vol 9, p. 189.*

Here are some of the three powers statements. Since we have seen some of the other statements, we can now see the real meaning of these statements. They are not speaking of the Trinity at all.

Positive Truth Versus Spiritualistic Representations. --I am instructed to say, The sentiments of those who are searching for advanced scientific ideas are not to be trusted. Such representations as the following are made: "The Father is as the light invisible: the Son is as the light embodied; the Spirit is the light shed abroad." "The Father is like the dew, invisible vapor; the Son is like the dew gathered in beauteous form; the Spirit is like the dew fallen to the seat of life." Another representation: "The Father is like the invisible vapor; the Son is like the leaden cloud; the Spirit is rain fallen and working in refreshing power." {Evangelism Ev 614.1}

All these spiritualistic representations are simply nothingness. They are imperfect, untrue. They weaken and diminish the Majesty which no earthly likeness can be compared to. God cannot be compared with the things His hands have made. These are mere earthly things, suffering under the curse of God because of the sins of man. The Father cannot be described by the things of earth. The Father is all the fullness of the Godhead bodily, and is invisible to mortal sight. {Evangelism Ev 614.2}

The Son is all the fullness of the Godhead manifested. The Word of God declares Him to be "the express image of His person." "God so loved the world, that He gave His only-begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life." Here is shown the personality of the Father. {Evangelism Ev 614.3}

The Comforter that Christ promised to send after He ascended to heaven, is the Spirit in all the fullness of the Godhead, making manifest the power of divine grace to all who receive and believe in Christ as a personal Saviour. **There are three living persons of the heavenly trio**; in the name of these **three great powers** --the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit--those who receive Christ by living faith are baptized, and these powers will co-operate with the obedient subjects of heaven in their efforts to live the new life in Christ.-- Special Testimonies, Series B, No. 7, pp. 62, 63. (1905) {Evangelism Ev 615.1}

The Lord Jesus described the difficulties they should meet. Having called their minds to rise to an eminence, **He bids them behold the vast confederacy of evil arrayed against God, against Christ, against all who unite with these holy powers.** Christ tells them they were to fight in fellowship with all the children of light; that satanic agencies would combine their forces to extinguish the light of the life of Christ out of their ranks. But they were not left to fight the battles in their own human strength. The angelic host coming as ministers of God would be in that battle. Also there would be **the eternal heavenly dignitaries**--God, and Christ, and the Holy Spirit--arming them with more than mortal energy, and would advance with them to the work, and convince the world of sin. {16 Manuscript Releases:16MR 204.4}

We are to realize that if we work the works of Christ, we shall not unite with the world. The Holy Spirit will give us a clear, distinct message to the world. If we will come into close relation to Christ, we shall have a part to act in carrying forward the work of present truth for this time. We are to cooperate with **the three highest powers in heaven**,-- the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost,--and these powers will work through us, making us workers together with God. But when a man goes forth in human sufficiency, then the enemy comes in and inspires him, and he knows not what manner of spirit he is of. The Lord saw this, and instructed me that at the General Conference held in Oakland, I should hold no conversation with you. {SpTB07 51.1}

7. The Book *Evangelism* and Other Spirit of Prophecy quotes used to teach the Trinity teaching

There are other statements that have been used to say that Mrs. White believed in the Trinity. We will look at two groups of quotes in this chapter because they overlap somewhat. Actually there is also a lot of overlap between the quotes found in Chapter 6 and the quotes found in This chapter. So we will be referring back to Chapter 6 from time to time.

Let's start by looking at the book: *Evangelism*, published in 1946. In this book, a list of short quotes were incorporated that seemed to strongly support the Trinity doctrine. In this book LeRoy Froom and others, who were on the editorial committee, were able to compile these statements giving a distorted view of Mrs. White's understanding on God.

Several things were done to make sure that these statements supported the Trinity concept. 1) Statements were used out of context. 2) These quotes are very short, sometimes not even whole sentences. 3) ellipses were used to get rid of parts that didn't agree with their view. 4) Subtitles were used to get the reader to think a certain way even before reading the quote. 5) They only used certain quotes which could be used to support the Trinity concept. Other quotes were not used. It was not a balanced group of quotes.

We will see the evidence for these five points when we start looking at the quotes themselves. Now here is an interesting letter that LeRoy Froom wrote to R.A. Anderson. It shows what was in the mind of those who inserted these quotes and it indicates a purpose for these quotes. The men in Columbia Union were conservatives that held on to what Adventists had believed from the beginning:

I am sure that we are agreed in evaluating the book, *Evangelism* as one of the great contributions in which the Ministerial Association had a part back in those days. You know what it did with men in the Columbia Union who came face to face with the clear, unequivocal statements of the Spirit of Prophecy on the Deity of Christ, personality of the Holy Spirit, the Trinity, and like. They either had to lay down their arms and accept those statements, or else they had to reject the Spirit of Prophecy.

I know that you and Miss Kleuser and I had considerable to do with the selection of these things under the encouragement of men like Elder Branson who felt that the earlier concept of the White Estate brethren on this book *Evangelism* was not adequate. {Letter from LeRoy Froom to Roy A. Anderson, January 18, 1966}

The real issue is this: All of these quotes in *Evangelism* fit nicely within the trinitarian viewpoint. But Mrs. White has written all kinds of statements. Most of these statements do not fit within the trinitarian viewpoint at all. Why were they not quoted in *Evangelism*? Obviously there have been leaders within the church who have worked to change the doctrines of our church and this is just one step in that process.

This example illustrates how the church leaders have been so successful in changing our beliefs. They only quote Mrs. White when she says something that will fit within the trinitarian viewpoint. All the other statements are ignored. Since most Adventist today do not read widely of her writings nor do they study topics like this very deeply; They just take what the church feeds them and they apparently never suspect that they are being lied to.

The other group of quotes is provided by Erwin Gane. Erwin in his masters thesis, in the early 1960's, stated that Mrs. White actually taught that Jesus did not have a beginning, that He always existed as part of the Godhead along with the Father. Here in his own words is what he says: [Ellen G. White stated categorically](#)

many times that there never was a time when Christ did not exist. He was not brought into existence by the Father either by a process of creation or of eternal generation. He has always been with the Father. He did not have a beginning. {The Arian or Anti-Trinitarian Views Presented in SDA Literature and the EGW Answer. by Erwin Roy Gane's Masters Thesis June 1963 for the SDA Theological Seminary, Andrews U}

Gane then gives six EGW quotes which he believes is proof that this was her view.

Let's start looking at the actual quotes. You will see that they relate to the quotes that we have already looked at in Chapter 6.

1 - From the Days of Eternity

These six quotes relate to the first quote of Chapter 6 dealing with the Days of Eternity.

Quote 1

But while God's Word speaks of the humanity of Christ when upon this earth, it also speaks decidedly regarding His pre-existence. The Word existed as a **divine being**, even as **the eternal Son of God**, in union and oneness with His Father. From everlasting he was the Mediator of the covenant, the one in whom all nations of the earth, both Jews and Gentiles, if they accepted him, were to be blessed. "The Word was with God, and the Word was God." Before men or angels were created, the Word was with God, and was God. {1 Selected Messages: 1SM 247.2} (citing R&H, April 5, 1906 par. 5)

This is one of these places where Erwin Gane says Mrs. White categorically states that there never was a time when Christ did not exist. Here it is: "The Word existed as a **divine being**, even as **the eternal Son of God**, in union and oneness with His Father". But, is that what Mrs. White meant?

If we read the whole article from either *1 Selected Messages* or the Review & Herald we find that there are many things that Mrs. White wrote that indicates she did not mean that Christ has always existed. This next quote is from the very next paragraph:

The world was made by Him, "and without him was not any thing made that was made" (John 1:3). If Christ made all things, He existed before all things. The words spoken in regard to this are so decisive that no one need be left in doubt. **Christ was God essentially**, and in the highest sense. **He was with God from all eternity**, God over all, blessed forevermore. {1 Selected Messages - 1SM 247.3}

While trinitarians might want to say that Jesus is God, Mrs. White says that Christ was essentially God. After all as the Son of God, He is a divine being. He was with God from all eternity. That means He was with God since He was born. Now, in the very next paragraph Mrs. White describes the beginnings of the Son of God:

The Lord Jesus Christ, the divine Son of God, existed from eternity, a distinct person, yet one with the Father. He was the surpassing glory of heaven. He was the commander of the heavenly intelligences, and the adoring homage of the angels was received by Him as His right. This was no robbery of God. "The Lord possessed me in the beginning of his way," He declares, "before his works of old. **I was set up** from everlasting, from the beginning, or ever the earth was. When there were no depths, **I was brought forth**; when there were no fountains abounding with water. Before the mountains were settled, before the hills **was I brought forth**: while as yet he had not made the earth, nor the fields, nor the highest part of the dust of the world. When he prepared the heavens, I was there: when he set a compass upon the face of the depth" (Proverbs 8:22-27). {1 Selected Messages - 1SM 247.4}

Mrs. White then starts looking at Proverbs 8 which says the Son was set up, that He was brought forth. In other words, the Son had a beginning. Now Proverbs 8 identifies what was brought forth as wisdom. But on the same page Mrs. White quotes the fact from 1 Corinthians that Jesus is the wisdom of God. This is one of the verses that Adventists have historically used to confirm that Proverbs 8 is actually talking about Christ.

“We preach Christ crucified,” declared Paul, “unto the Jews a stumblingblock, and unto the Greeks foolishness; but unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, **Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God**“ (1 Corinthians 1:23, 24). {1 Selected Messages - 1SM 248.3}

Mrs. White clearly identifies Christ as His only-begotten Son within a few pages of the other quotes:

By His obedience to all the commandments of God, Christ wrought out a redemption for men. This was not done by going out of Himself to another, but by taking humanity into Himself. Thus Christ gave to humanity an existence out of Himself. To bring humanity into Christ, to bring the fallen race into oneness with divinity, is the work of redemption. Christ took human nature that men might be one with Him as He is one with the Father, that God may love man as He loves **His only-begotten Son**, that men may be partakers of the divine nature, and be complete in Him. {1 Selected Messages - 1SM 250.3}

The Holy Spirit, which was given to the Son by His Father, is now pictured as proceeding from the only-begotten Son of God.

The Holy Spirit, which proceeds from the only-begotten Son of God, binds the human agent, body, soul, and spirit, to the perfect, divine-human nature of Christ. This union is represented by the union of the vine and the branches. Finite man is united to the manhood of Christ. Through faith human nature is assimilated with Christ’s nature. We are made one with God in Christ. {1 Selected Messages - 1SM 251.1}

This is amazing to me. In that first paragraph, we saw what Erwin Gane was interested in making sure we saw: “The Word existed as a **divine being**, even as **the eternal Son of God**“ Yet, we then saw in the next two paragraphs statements that went against his position: “**Christ was God essentially**“ ”**I was set up**“ ”**I was brought forth**“ ”**was I brought forth**“ and then within a few pages we see other good point against his position.

If we had stopped with what was given to us by Erwin Gane, we might have wondered what Mrs. White meant. However, when we kept reading, we found example after example of clues indicating that the Son really was born. He had a beginning and He is in fact the only-begotten Son of God.

We must understand these thing in such a way that all her statements agree with each other. Often on my web site, there are people who want to interpret certain places in the Bible to say that we never lose consciousness when we die. They are saying that we have an immortal soul and that we never die. However, when they do that they pit one part of the Bible against the other because there are other places which say the dead know nothing!

We need to understand both the Bible and the Spirit of Prophecy in such a way so that all the statements agree with each other. When we come to the place where all the parts agree according to our understanding, that is a sign that we are approaching truth.

There was a time when Christ proceeded forth and came from God, from the bosom of the Father (John 8:42; 1:18), but that time was so far back in the days of eternity that to finite comprehension it is practically without beginning. {*Christ and His Righteousness* by EJ Waggoner (1890) Page 19}

Mrs. White used EJ Waggoner for the expression that she used. Both believed that Christ had a beginning and that He began in the days of eternity. That is all the phrase means. It does not mean that the Son has always existed.

Quote 2

Quote 2 is the same kind dealing with the same issue as Quote 1: In Quote 1 we had “The Word existed as a **divine being**, even as **the eternal Son of God**” now we have “**From eternity**”

From eternity Christ has been man’s Redeemer. Ever since the Fall there has come to those uniting with Him in His great work the word: “Be not weary in well-doing.” 2 Thessalonians 3:13. Be ye steadfast, unmovable, always abounding in the work of the Lord.” 1 Corinthians 15:58. {9 Testimonies - 9T 220.2}

“From eternity” is the same as saying “in the days of eternity”. It does not mean that the Son of God never had a beginning, but from all her statements we know that from some time in eternity, Christ has been man’s Redeemer.

Quote 3 This is how it is given in Evangelism

The Pre-existent, Self-existent Son of God.--Christ is the pre-existent, self-existent Son of God.... In speaking of his pre-existence, Christ carries the mind back through dateless ages. He assures us that there never was a time when He was not in close fellowship with the eternal God. He to whose voice the Jews were then listening had been with God as one brought up with Him.--Signs of the Times, Aug. 29, 1900. {Evangelism - Ev 615.2}

“The Pre-existent, Self-existent Son of God.” is just the heading and is not the quote. What follows is the quote starting with: “**Christ is the pre-existent, self-existent Son of God....**” Then some text is skipped including a whole paragraph.

Let’s look at what was left out. Below, that which is in the book Evangelism is green. All the rest was taken out of the quote. Now I ask that you look at the part of the paragraph with red text. You will quickly see why they did not put this in Evangelism!

“Before Abraham was, I am.” **Christ is the pre-existent, self-existent Son of God.** The message He gave to Moses to give to the children of Israel was, “Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you.” The prophet Micah writes of Him, “But thou, Bethlehem Ephratah, tho thou be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of Thee shall He come forth unto Me that is to be ruler in Israel; whose goings forth have been from of old, from everlasting.” {Signs of the Times - ST, August 29, 1900 par. 13}

Through Solomon Christ declared: “**The Lord possessed Me in the beginning of His way, before His works of old. I was set up from everlasting, from the beginning, or ever the earth was. When there were no depths, I was brought forth; when there were no fountains abounding with water. Before the mountains were settled, before the hills was I brought forth. . . . When He gave to the sea His decree, that the waters should not pass His commandment; when He appointed the foundations of the earth; then I was by Him, as one brought up with Him; and I was daily His delight, rejoicing always before Him.**” {Signs of the Times - ST, August 29, 1900 par. 14}

In speaking of His pre-existence, Christ carries the mind back through dateless ages. He assures us that there never was a time when He was not in close fellowship with the eternal God. He to whose voice the Jews were then listening had been with God as one brought up with Him. {Signs of the Times - ST, August 29, 1900 par. 15}

This is amazing! They left a whole paragraph out because it refers to Christ's origin! His birth! I have to wonder how the members of the committee could face themselves in the mirror? To me they do not appear to be honest how they put these quotes together!

So, when the Son of God was born, God set up His divine Son as one who was self-existent, the same as He the Father is. Later on they created all things together. This part that was omitted makes all the difference to its understanding of the text!

The fact that this quote was made rather deceptively to say something very different from what Mrs. White meant it to say. It reminds me of the attack Satan will wage against the truth: **“. . . They will bring in all conceivable fallacies, and will present them as coming from Mrs. White, that they may beguile souls”** {Selected Messages, bk. 1, pp. 41}

Now we should understand what Mrs. White was really saying: That “there never was a time when He was not in close fellowship with the eternal God” refers to the time that the Son of God has existed.

Quote 4 This is how it is given in Evangelism

He was equal with God, infinite and omnipotent. He is **the eternal self-existent Son**. {Evangelism - Ev 615.3} (citing Manuscript 101 1897 which was also released: 12MR 395.2-395.3)

Just small quotes are used, the second part isn't even a whole sentence. Now lets see the whole original quote and see why they didn't want the rest to be seen. The green text is what if quoted in Evangelism:

Christ was not compelled to endure this cruel treatment. The yoke of obligation was not laid upon Him to undertake the work of redemption. Voluntarily He offered Himself, a willing, spotless sacrifice. **He was equal with God, infinite and omnipotent**. He was above all finite requirements. He was Himself the law in character. Of the highest angels it could not be said that they had never borne a yoke. The angels all bear the yoke of dependence, the yoke of obedience. They are the appointed messengers of Him who is Commander of all heaven. {12 Manuscript Release - 12MR 395.2}

No one of the angels could become a substitute and surety for the human race, for their life is God's; they could not surrender it. On Christ alone the human family depended for their existence. **He is the eternal, self-existent Son**, on whom no yoke had come. When God asked, “whom shall I send, and who will go for Us?” **Christ alone of the angelic host could reply**, “Here am I; send Me.” He alone had covenanted before the foundation of the world to become a surety for man. He could say that which not the highest angel could say--“I have power over My own life. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again” [see John 10:18]. {12 Manuscript Release - 12MR 395.3}

Again, these quotes in Evangelism, are extremely short and separated from each other. Also, the second quote isn't even a whole sentence. It is clear that they were trying to slant the understanding of these words toward the Trinity.

Now, Mrs. White makes an interesting statement. She says that Christ is one of the “angelic host”. We know this to be true because He has been known as Michael the Archangel. Now, people who believe in the Trinity, would say that Christ is part of God, not one of the “angelic host”. Most Trinitarians object to the idea that the Son of God is also Michael!

Let's try to understand how Christ could be the eternal, self-existent Son? We have both Bible and Mrs. White to help us on this question.

9 For **in Him dwells all the fullness of the Godhead bodily**; Colossians 2:9

We know that Christ is fully Divine.

19 For **it pleased the Father that in Him all the fullness should dwell**, Colossians 1:19

And we can see that it pleased the Father that the Son should be fully Divine. Mrs White also quotes this same idea from the Bible:

This Saviour was the brightness of His Father's glory and the express image of His person. He possessed divine majesty, perfection, and excellence. **He was equal with God. "It pleased the Father that in Him should all fullness dwell."** {2T 200.1}

Thus, we also know that Christ received His Divinity from His Father. Christ is fully Divine and equal with God because that is what the Father wanted Him to be.

26 "For as the Father has life in Himself, so **He has granted the Son to have life in Himself**, John 5:26

Christ has life in Himself because God, His Father has given to His Son to have life in Himself. So, Christ is the eternal, self-existent Son because God has given it to Him, ever since He came forth from God.

Quote 5

Our policy is, Do not make prominent the objectionable features of our faith, which strike most decidedly against the practices and customs of the people, until the Lord shall give the people a fair chance to know that we are believers in Christ, that we do believe in **the divinity of Christ**, and in **His pre-existence**.--Testimonies to Ministers, p. 253. (1895) {Evangelism - Ev 613.2} Evangelism is quoting from the book Testimonies to Ministers which is quoting from Special Testimonies series A)

Mrs. White was instructing on how we were to teach the truth to the "colored people" She said we must first make sure that people know we believe Christ is divine. This was an important point since many believed we thought Jesus was created! Look at what she wrote. The green text is what if quoted in Evangelism::

Proper Methods in Labor. The truth cannot be introduced in any haphazard way among the colored people, neither can advice be given to the believers and to those who teach the truth, to be presumptuous. When the period comes in the Southern States to do as did the three worthies who refused to bow to Nebuchadnezzar's image, that time will present decisions for or against the commandments of God. There is no need of closing up our own way wholly. It will be made more difficult to work the many fields that have not yet been touched. **Our policy is, Do not make prominent the objectionable features of our faith, which strike most decidedly against the practices and customs of the people, until the Lord shall give the people a fair chance to know that we are believers in Christ, that we do believe in the divinity of Christ, and in his preexistence.** Let the testimony of the world's Redeemer be dwelt upon. "I, Jesus, have sent mine angel to testify unto you these things in the churches." There is need of strictly guarding the word that the pen traces upon paper. The Lord help us to learn in the school of Christ his meekness and lowliness. {SpTA05 3.3}

If the Majesty of heaven guarded his every word lest he should stir up the spirit of Satan and the fallen angels, how much more careful should we be in all things! {Special Testimonies to Ministers and Workers Series A No. 5 page 4 - SpTA05 4.1}

There is nothing really special in this quote. From the previous discussion of other quotes, we already know of Christ's pre-existence and His divinity and that He received his divinity from His Father. Also, we know that just as the Father has life in himself, he granted the Son to also have life in Himself. This has special relevance to the next group of quotes.

Now, let's look at the reason for Mrs. White giving this caution for giving the truth to the colored people. In much of the early history of the Adventist movement, there were many who said that Adventists believed that Christ, the Son of God, was created. So special care was made to try to make sure people understood the truth. Here is an interesting quote:

In this country [Australia], the denominational ministers tell the most unblushing falsehoods to their congregations in reference to our work and our people. Whatever false report has been started, is circulated by those who oppose the truth, and is repeated from church to church and from community to community. The circulators of these falsehoods take no pains to find out whether or not they are true, for many of those who repeat the reports, though not the framers of them, still love the false reports, and take delight in giving them a wide circulation. They do not, like honest, just men, come to those who are accused, and seek to find out what is the truth concerning what they have heard in regard to their faith; but without inquiry they spread false statements in order to prejudice the people against those who hold the truth. For instance, an effort was made to obtain the use of the hall at a village four miles from Hastings, where some of our workers proposed to present the gospel to the people; but they did not succeed in obtaining the hall, because a school-teacher there opposed the truth, and **declared to the people that Seventh-day Adventists did not believe in the divinity of Christ.** This man may not have known what our faith is on this point, but he was not left in ignorance. He was informed that **there is not a people on earth who hold more firmly to the truth of Christ's pre-existence than do Seventh-day Adventists.** But the answer was given that they did not want that the doctrines of Seventh-day Adventists should be promulgated in that community. So the door was closed. {RH, December 5, 1893 par. 5}

We do not believe that the Son was created at all. But that He is the only begotten Son of God. He came out of the Father. Thus we can see that Mrs. White was warning us to be careful so that the people would have a fair chance to know we are believers in Christ, His divinity and pre-existence.

Quote 6

Christ shows them that, although they might reckon His life to be less than fifty years, yet **His divine life could not be reckoned by human computation.** The existence of Christ before His incarnation is not measured by figures. {Evangelism p. 616} (citing Signs of the Times May 3, 1899)

We have already seen phrases like: "The eternal Son of God" "He was with God from all eternity." "From eternity Christ has been man's Redeemer." "He is the eternal self-existent Son."

These phrases speak of the Son as being eternal, yet we now know that this must be placed in the context of the fact that Christ is really the only begotten Son of God. Thus we know He had a beginning but it was so far back that his existence cannot be reckoned by human computation.

There was a time when Christ proceeded forth and came from God, from the bosom of the Father (John 8:42; 1:18), but that time was so far back in the days of eternity that to finite comprehension it is practically without beginning. {*Christ and His Righteousness* by EJ Waggoner (1890) Page 19}

So, this quote is actually easy to understand even when we also understand that the Son had a beginning but it was so far back that in human terms it is practically without beginning. Yet we know the Son had a beginning none the less.

2 - In Christ is life, original, unborrowed, underived

We have already seen this first quote from Desire of Ages in the last chapter, Chapter 6.

Jesus declared, “I am the resurrection, and the life.” In Christ is life, **original, unborrowed, underived.** “He that hath the Son hath life.” 1 John 5:12. The divinity of Christ is the believer’s assurance of eternal life. DA 530.4

So, we have already seen that Christ had received His original, unborrowed, underived life from His Father. This was at the beginning before anything was created. We also saw that we can receive a little bit of this same life from God through the Son.

But this next quote has a new aspect that we must look at:

But the life of Christ was unborrowed. **No one can take this life from Him. “I lay it down of Myself.” (John 10:18),** He said. **In Him was life, original, unborrowed, underived.** {1 Selected Messages p. 296}

By saying that “No one can take this life from Him. ”I lay it down of Myself.” Many conclude that this includes God the Father as well. So that Christ rose Himself without the help of the Father. However, let’s look into the issue.

I have heard a preacher say there are 30 to 35 places in the Bible where it says God raised up Jesus. I have found about half of them when I did a few searches. Here are just a few of them:

21 who through Him believe in **God, who raised Him from the dead** and gave Him glory, so that your faith and hope are in God. 1 Peter 1:21

30 “**The God of our fathers raised up Jesus** whom you murdered by hanging on a tree. Acts 5:30

9 that if you confess with your mouth the Lord Jesus and believe in your heart that **God has raised Him from the dead**, you will be saved. Romans 10:9

15 Yes, and we are found false witnesses of God, because we have testified of **God that He raised up Christ**, whom He did not raise up--if in fact the dead do not rise. 1 Corinthians 15:15

1 Paul, an apostle (not from men nor through man, but through Jesus Christ and **God the Father who raised Him from the dead**), Galatians 1:1

32 “**This Jesus God has raised up**, of which we are all witnesses. Acts 2:32

Here is a list of Scripture that I found which state that the Father raised up Jesus: Acts 2:24, 32; 3:13, 15, 26; 4:10; 5:30; 10:40; 13:30; 17:31; Romans 7:4; 10:9; 1Corinthians 15:15; Galatians 1:1; Colossians 2:12; 1Peter 1:21; Hebrews 13:20; Ephesians 1:20.

So how can we get all these verses to agree with the following two verses?

19 Jesus answered and said to them, “Destroy this temple, and in three days **I will raise it up.**” John 2:19

18 “No one takes it from Me, but I lay it down of Myself. I have power to lay it down, and **I have power to take it again. This command I have received from My Father.**” John 10:18

The answer is simple. Notice that after Jesus says He has power to take His life up again, He then says: “**This command I have received from My Father.**” It is clearly the Father that enabled the Son!

We can see that the Father has assured the Son that He will raise Him up from the dead. So, Christ knows He will have power to take up His life again because His Father will give Him that power. He will raise Him up from the dead. Now when we look at this quote:

But the life of Christ was unborrowed. **No one can take this life from Him. “I lay it down of Myself.” (John 10:18),** He said. **In Him was life, original, unborrowed, underived.** {1 Selected Messages p. 296}

We can see that Christ was not forced to die for us. He laid down his life for us on His own voluntarily. And since He lived a perfect life without sin on this earth as a man; God rose Him up from the dead. Thus Christ was given the ability to take up His life again.

We shall have to meet erroneous teaching

Again and again we shall be called to meet **the influence of men** who are studying sciences of satanic origin, through which Satan is working **to make a nonentity of God and of Christ.**

The Father and the Son each have a personality. Christ declared: “I and My Father are one.” Yet it was the Son of God who came to the world in human form. Laying aside His royal robe and kingly crown, He clothed His divinity with humanity, that humanity through His infinite sacrifice might become partakers of the divine nature and escape the corruption that is in the world through lust.

{Evangelism 613.3} Taken from the following found in two locations: {9T 68.2-3 (1909)} {RH, August 6, 1908 par. 13-14 (1909)}

At the time that Mrs. White made this comment, she was warning about how people were speculating about God and Christ. She was upholding what the church has always taught about the truth about God and His Son. However, in Evangelism, it is placed to make you think that She was supporting the Trinity idea. In the 1905 General Conference session, she warned that wrong views of God and Christ were making their way into the SDA church.

“And truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ.” All through the Scriptures, **the Father and the Son are spoken of as two distinct personages.** You will hear men endeavoring **to make the Son of God a nonentity.** He and the Father are one, **but they are two personages.** Wrong sentiments regarding this are coming in, and we shall all have to meet them. {RH, July 13, 1905 par. 3 (*Ellen G. White to the delegates at the 1905 General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists, Takoma Park Washington D. C., May 25th 1905*)}

In both of these quotes the Holy Spirit is never mentioned. But on the other hand, Mrs. White is teaching that the Father and Son are two distinct individuals. And that there are people who are trying to make the Son of God a nonentity or not a separate individual. Of course, in the Trinity, the Son of God is a nonentity since all three of them are combined in one. They are thought to have always existed that way.

But we know that Christ is separate from the Father and He is actually the Son of God. He came out of God so He had a beginning. they are two distinct and separate individuals.

Another point that is made: A lot is often made of these kind of statements: “I and My Father are one.” Thus this is said to support the Trinity idea. Yet the other statement is ignored. saying: that we can be made one with Him in the same way that He is one with His Father.

21 “**that they all may be one, as You, Father, are in Me**, and I in You; that they also may be one in Us, that the world may believe that You sent Me.

22 “And the glory which You gave Me I have given them, that **they may be one just as We are one**: John 17:21-22

So the Son being one with the Father is not speaking of a Trinity, but instead, it is speaking of a close working together between the Father and His Son. And we are told that we can also be one with Jesus as He is one with His Father.

Christ and the Father Sanding side-by-side on the Mount

With the Father at Sinai.--When they [Israel] came to Sinai, He took occasion to refresh their minds in regard to His requirements. **Christ and the Father, standing side by side upon the mount**, with solemn majesty proclaimed the Ten Commandments.--Historical Sketches, p. 231. (1866) {Ev 616.3}

This quote comes from Historical Sketches. Its a paragraph concerning the Sabbath. The part that is quoted in Evangelism is in the color brown below.

Some urge that it is of no consequence whether we keep the Sabbath or not; but we say that from the Bible standpoint it is a matter of great importance. Had it not been important, God would not have wrought in so marvelous a manner to deliver his people from Egyptian bondage. It was because he saw that they could not obey his commandments in their servitude, that he revealed his mighty arm in bringing them into a place where they could serve him. **When they came to Sinai, he took occasion to refresh their minds in regard to his requirements. Christ and the Father, standing side by side upon the mount, with solemn majesty proclaimed the ten commandments**, placing in the very center of the decalogue the Sabbath command. Again and again the Lord told the people that if they would keep his Sabbath he would take them to himself to be his chosen people; and again and again sorrow and shame were brought upon them because they failed to keep it. He also told them that the Sabbath should be a sign between him and them forever, that they might know that he was the Lord their God. Therefore it is of great importance that the Sabbath be regarded according to the commandment. {Historical Sketches - HS 231.4}

I am not sure why this quote was in Evangelism. They might be suggesting that they are equals, meaning that they are both part of the Trinity, and having always existed. However, this quote can also be seen from the context of all the other places where Mrs. White clearly explains that the Father and Son are two separate individuals and that it pleases the Father that He is to be divine as He is.

The idea that Christ was standing side by side with the Father, at the time of Moses, certainly indicates that Christ had an existence before He came to the earth. In addition, In both the Bible and Mrs. White’s writings, we have the information saying: that once man sinned, it was only with Christ that all communication was made. No longer was the Father to communicate to man. (except for two exceptions. 1) Christ’s baptism and 2) On the Mount of Transfiguration)

. . . After the transgression of Adam, **God no longer communicated directly with man**; earth was separated, as it were, from the continent of heaven . . . {RH, June 10, 1890 par. 4}

It is clear that God Himself no longer communicates with man.

All the communion between heaven and the fallen race **has been through Christ**. It was the Son of God that gave to our first parents the promise of redemption. It was **He who revealed Himself to the patriarchs**. Adam, Noah, Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, and Moses understood the gospel. They looked for salvation through man's Substitute and Surety. These holy men of old held communion with the Saviour who was to come to our world in human flesh; and some of them talked with Christ and heavenly angels face to face. {PP 366.1}

All through the ages of this world, it has always been Christ who communicated with man.

Up to the time of man's rebellion against the government of God, there had been free communion between God and man. But the sin of Adam and Eve separated earth from heaven, so that man could not have communion with his Maker. Yet the world was not left in solitary hopelessness. **The ladder represents Jesus, the appointed medium of communication**. Had He not with His own merits bridged the gulf that sin had made, the ministering angels could have held no communion with fallen man. Christ connects man in his weakness and helplessness with the source of infinite power. {PP 184.2}

Jesus is our mediator between God and man, the appointed medium of communication.

. . . After the fall, Christ became Adam's instructor. He acted in God's stead toward humanity, saving the race from immediate death. **He took upon Him the work of mediator between God and man**. . . . {ST, May 29, 1901 par. 11}

So, we can know that Jesus was our mediator long before He came to earth as Jesus, the Son of man.

The Holy Spirit

Personality of the Holy Spirit.--We need to realize that the Holy Spirit, **who is as much a person as God is a person**, is walking through these grounds.--Manuscript 66, 1899. (From a talk to the students at the Avondale School.) {Ev 616.5}

This quote comes from a Manuscript Release. It is a paragraph concerning the new college in Australia. The part that is quoted in *Evangelism* is in the color brown.

The Lord says this because He knows it is for our good. He would build a wall around us, to keep us from transgression, so that His blessing and love may be bestowed on us in rich measure. This is the reason we have established a school here. The Lord instructed us that this was the place in which we should locate, and we have had every reason to think that we are in the right place. We have been brought together as a school, and **we need to realize that the Holy Spirit, who is as much a person as God is a person, is walking through these grounds**, that the Lord God is our keeper, and helper. He hears every word we utter and knows every thought of the mind.--Ms 66, 1899, p. 4. (Talk, April 15, 1899). Released April 28, 1976. {7MR 299.2} [Extracts from discourse given by Mrs. E. G. White in the Avondale Church, March 25, 1899. This was only released very recently like April 1976 from a sermon that was never printed before!]

Notice the rest of the paragraph that is omitted in *Evangelism*

. . . **we need to realize that the Holy Spirit, who is as much a person as God is a person, is walking through these grounds**, that the Lord God is our keeper, and helper. He hears every word we utter and knows every thought of the mind.

This text really isn't a problem either because Mrs. White is talking about the Lord God as being our keeper

and helper. We should remember that the Holy Spirit is the omnipresent presence of both God and Christ.

The Holy Spirit is said to be a person, yet we know that the Holy Spirit is not a person in the same sense as God and Christ. The Son is a separate person from God. Thus God and Christ are two separate personages. Now where in the Bible do we find that the Holy Spirit has a spirit of its own which would give Him individuality like the Father and His Son? There is none.

Here is the very next statement in *Evangelism*:

The Holy Spirit is a person, for He beareth witness with our spirits that we are the children of God. When this witness is borne, it carries with it its own evidence. At such times we believe and are sure that we are the children of God. . . . {Ev 616.6}

The Holy Spirit has a personality, else He could not bear witness to our spirits and with our spirits that we are the children of God. He must also be a divine person, else He could not search out the secrets which lie hidden in the mind of God. “For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.”--Manuscript 20, 1906. {Ev 617.1}

This quote also comes from a Manuscript Release. The part that is quoted in Evangelism is in the color brown.

The Holy Spirit always leads to the written word. **The Holy Spirit is a person; for He beareth witness with our spirits that we are the children of God. When this witness is borne, it carries with it its own evidence. At such times we believe and are sure that we are the children of God.** What strong evidence of the power of truth we can give to believers and unbelievers when we can voice the words of John, “We have known and believed the love that God hath to us. God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him.” {20MR 68.5}

The Holy Spirit has a personality, else He could not bear witness to our spirits and with our spirits that we are the children of God. He must also be a divine person, else He could not search out the secrets which lie hidden in the mind of God. “For what man knoweth the things of a man save the spirit of man, which is in him; even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.”--Ms 20, 1906. Ellen G. White Estate Washington, D.C. January 22, 1989. Entire Ms. {20MR 69.1}

Notice near the end of the first paragraph: God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, **and God in him**. In the first part of the paragraph, Mrs. White is talking about the Holy Spirit How the Holy Spirit is a witness to our spirits. Then she talks about God’s love and that God is in him or us. The two in Mrs. White seem to be very closely linked. When The Holy Spirit is witness to our spirits, that must mean God is in us and we dwelleth in God.

It is also very interesting when we start thinking about how the Holy Spirit can be a witness to our (human) spirit. If we have a spirit, does that make our spirit a person in its own right? Our spirit is the knowing part of us. It is what makes us what we are. When we die, it is our spirit that is saved and returned to God who gave it to us Ecclesiastes 12:7. Now our spirit cannot really work outside our body. So, when we die, our thoughts stop.

7 Then the dust will return to the earth as it was, And the spirit will return to God who gave it. Ecclesiastes 12:7

What about the Holy Spirit? It is through the Holy Spirit that God is omnipresent. Thus God's Spirit can function outside of God's physical form. This is something our spirits cannot do. We know that the Holy Spirit is both God and His Son's omnipresent presence with us.

18 "I will not leave you orphans; **I will come to you.**

23 Jesus answered and said to him, "If anyone loves Me, he will keep My word; and **My Father** will love him, and **We will come to him and make Our home with him.** John 14:18, 23

9 But you are not in the flesh but in the Spirit, if indeed **the Spirit of God dwells in you.** Now if anyone **does not have the Spirit of Christ,** he is not His. Romans 8:9

We can easily see that the Spirit of God and the Spirit of Christ is used interchangeably.

8. Jesus Told the Disciples how the Scriptures Aught to be Understood in the road to Emmaus

This is the telling of my own experience leading to the “**road to Emmaus**”. Something very similar happened to the Adventist church as also happened to those disciples on the road to Emmaus. God actually gave us our doctrines and they are plainly understood from the Bible if we choose to study it.

I wanted to give you a little of my own background, when you work on a PhD, you become indoctrinated in many ways of thinking. While working on a science degree does not present the same level of spiritual danger as when working on a religion or theology degree (that is unless evolution is accepted). There are many who have lost their faith because of science issues involving the Evolution/Creation question. That did not happen to me; However, there are other dangers that can change us. I have always had to live in a major Adventist center of learning with quite an Adventist community surrounding it. I believe that the “intelligencia” associated with the Adventist colleges and the college churches help to form an atmosphere for the entire local Adventist community that is not good.

I remember various people mentioning to me on several different occasions, that the Adventist church was really composed of two separate churches. Liberal Adventists were saying this to me: The people out in the country were more simple-minded and were more conservative, not being able to face the real issues that these new doctrines presented. So, they believed the way they have always believed. But those of us at the various Adventist centers actually took in more and are more progressive in our thinking. Thus we believe differently and more correctly.

This is an interesting type of indoctrination that places oneself on an elevated pedestal. It helps to raise a false sense of self esteem and it opens the door to new radical thinking which can go against what God has given us through His Word and through the Spirit of Prophecy. Thus, I believe it is a dangerous confidence to entertain in our thoughts and it helps to convince that we are on the right side when the opposite could be true.

I grew up in the Takoma Park area. I was a late-bloomer when it comes to reading. I didn't hardly do any reading at all before I went to Takoma Academy. But all of the sudden I began to read book after book. Since our house was filled with the youth paper-backs produced by our church, I started to read these missionary books. Every room in the house had at least one or two bookcases full of books. Even the hallway had two bookcases of books. By the time I entered college I was reading a lot of Mrs. White. I read through the conflict of the ages series multiple times. By the time I was at Loma Linda, I had read the nine volumes of the Testimonies through twice. Of course I read many of her other books as well.

I can remember when a popular youth leader came in and said we were going to change our Sabbath School. This was when I was still attending Beltsville Elementary SDA School but it didn't really matter to me whether we sang the regular songs or whether we sang the new hippie generation songs with guitar and sat in a big circle. This was before I had started reading and the change really didn't matter that much to me.

However, When I was attending Columbia Union College, I had then developed a love for the truth that was found in Mrs. White's books. Also I had a growing awareness of what our church stood for and I was even trying, from time to time, to start searching in the Bible for verses that supported what our church taught. It was then that another big change happened to our Sabbath School, this time I was in the Collegiate Sabbath School and at this time I was even teaching the Sabbath School lesson from time to time.

The new pastor came in and said he wanted to talk to us. He sat down with us and began, in a friendly way, to tell us that we should aim to look to the Bible for our answers and not to Mrs. White. He said that there were a lot of people, especially a lot of old ladies who would quote Mrs. White to people when they saw they were doing something wrong. He said they were using Mrs. White as a club and he said that it was not a good idea to read these books because they seemed to invite this kind of non-christian activity.

When there was a slight pause in his talk, I spoke up telling him and the group that I really enjoyed reading her books and that I found them to be deeply spiritual books. Books that led us to the Bible. That is about all I was able to say when he came back to say how happy he was about me but that I was very unusual. He said that most people don't read these books in that way. Then he continued to talk to us for some time.

This event was quite a shock to me because I had never heard of an Adventist pastor telling us not to read Mrs. White's books! At that time I didn't realize to the extent that the controversy over doctrine had gone in the church. But as time went on I soon forgot about it. Through the years I have read and studied what Mrs. White has written, yet it is amazing to me how easily I became confused over what we as a church have believed. But these experiences have at least given me a memory of a position that I could later come back to when I got desperate enough to find the answers.

Eventually I went to graduate school at Loma Linda, and then I taught in a couple of our colleges in the area of Biology and Chemistry for ten years. Through the years I had lost some of my faith in Mrs. White, not entirely, but I had rejected some of the truths that she taught in her books because they no longer agreed with my understanding of things. And when I read these subjects in her writings, such as the Sanctuary Service, I tended not to believe what I was reading and I would skip to other portions of her books that I could agree with. The Investigative Judgement was especially ridiculed right in the Sabbath School that I attended in Loma Linda!

I wasn't "taken in" completely, I often went back and forth between various independent ministry groups and the mainstream university setting. I am not really sure what I believed at the time, but I had heard so many of the arguments on both sides that I became confused. At the same time I realized that I no longer got the same feeling of being close to God when I read Mrs. Whites books. It was because I would often come upon a point that I could no longer agree with confidence. I knew there was a change and that I no longer was satisfied with my religion and my connection with God. I remember reading the New Testament trying to determine if we really did have to get rid of all our sins in order to be saved. At the time, I could not get at the answer even with prayer and Bible study! I was really confused and it seemed that God was no longer helping me. I no longer had that comfort when I read the Bible or Mrs. White. and I wanted to get back to how things used to be. Yet for a long while I didn't or couldn't change.

And yet I had such a strong feeling for what I did believe that I started a website on Creation/Evolution issues. But as time continued, I later added some of our conservative Adventist points of doctrine. And yet there was another important reason why I began to shift my direction of study away from Creation research.

In western Wyoming there was a rancher who was raising beefalo which is a hybrid animal that is a cross between cattle and buffalo. On his land were all kinds of bones of big dinosaurs. And so he decided to contact the local university about it and someone started doing research on his land. It was amazing. The site did not

just have different animal bones mixed together, no, there were literally whole piles of bones! Each pile of bones was made up of disarticulated bones from a different animal! Complete skeletons! What a find! And these piles came from big dinosaurs like triceratops! These were big bones.

School groups started coming to the site and the rancher came to listen to what they said to the students. They were definitely teaching them about evolution and the rancher became disturbed. He talked to the scientist asking him to also present the creation explanation as well. He flatly refused, and so the rancher ordered him off his land.

The rancher being a Baptist, called some Baptist Creationists to his place. They came all the way from eastern Tennessee. They looked at the site and decided they needed to contact another person. This person as a creationist was acknowledged to know more about dinosaurs than any other Creationist. He was an Adventist friend of mine and he called me up and asked if I wanted to go with him. We had gone to graduate school together at Loma Linda.

It was quite a group that came together, Adventists and different groups of Baptists. To me it was real interesting but I soon had the shock of my life! I started going around visiting, getting to know the people in each group and to know what their research projects were. One group really gained my attention. The two guys were all excited with what they were doing and quickly went over the basic points of their research. Then one of the two said, you know, if we can prove that the flood, according to the Bible, really happened, without a shadow of a doubt; Then, we will be able to go to Washington DC and demand a Sunday law! They said this with beaming faces!

He went on, but I couldn't believe my ears. I was shocked and started to ask myself what I was doing as it became more apparent to me what their main objective was in their research. Was it really worth that much for me to study scientifically the evidences of Noah's global flood? After awhile I decided that I should start to redirect my attention toward last-day events: What must I do to have eternal life and what can I do to save others. Perhaps I should start colporteur. Because of my extensive reading of Mrs. White and my convictions, these were obvious things that came to mind.

So, even though my web pages initially started with various creation/evolution issues. Because of my experience in Wyoming, I now began to add various religious topics such as the state of the dead, the second coming, the millennium, the great controversy, the Sabbath, and even Michael the archangel. These were topics that I had never lost faith in and they were good topics to begin my study of the Bible. They were safe topics.

In addition, I discovered that people actually have a hunger to know the answers for some of the basic questions in life. Like, what will happen when I die? Most people came to visit my site because of the religious topics, not the creation topics. So, this convinced me to add still more pages on Bible truths and to widen my breadth of the truths that we Adventists have always known.

However, since I grew up after the "Questions of Doctrine" disaster, where many of these old Adventist doctrines were dropped by the Adventist church, my website did not have any of these deleted doctrines. There are many reasons why I did not include them: 1) they were only part of a hazy memory that I had heard as a boy in church; 2) Also, I was prejudiced against it because of my Sabbath School experiences. 3) But lastly, the books that I had for reference just didn't have any information on the dropped doctrines. For example: I used "*Studying Together*" by Mark Finley, An SDA evangelist who wrote the book for the purpose of allowing the reader to be able to reach out to other people not of our faith. It's a well known ready-reference Bible Handbook of our doctrines. I have used this little book a lot since starting my web pages. I have since discovered that none of these dropped topics from Adventism's list of doctrines were even in that book! It was as if they were dropped from the record of history and I had forgotten that originally there was much more to consider.

I have an extensive list of EGW books and magazine articles that I personally own, yet I didn't read as widely as I should have read. Thus, what I did read, seemed not to alert me to what was happening to our church. It was as if I had a mental block so I couldn't understand. Yet I knew that there was something bad that had happened to our church. When I was about ready to leave Loma Linda and become a missionary to Puerto Rico, the Adventist Book Center in Loma Linda had a 20% sale on all Ellen White books! Also, for the first time I had some money! So, I came in there and bought everything in site! Even all the various published and unpublished manuscript collections and her Review and Herald, Signs of the Times, and many other article-publications I bought as well.

As I was picking up these books and putting them in my cart, there was an old man with a full beard there right in the store. He really seemed out of place because his skin was rough and he had a scraggly beard that was at least a foot long! He looked like an old mountain man that just came to the city. Well, our eyes met and he just looked at me for a few moments and then blurted out: "They told them not to publish that book!" That is all he said. I had no idea what he was talking about and I was so dumbfounded that I didn't even ask him any questions!

I somehow concluded that he was talking about "that book" which everyone was talking about. But I was not even sure of the name of that book. But I did know enough to realize that this book, *Questions of Doctrine*, was the source of a lot of trouble in the church. But that was all I suspected. At the time I really didn't know what was in *Questions of Doctrine*. In fact, I had never even seen the book before, I had only heard of it.

I was friends with Dr Raymond Cottrell, who helped to write the Adventist Bible Commentary; Because we were both "Ham Radio", or Amateur Radio operators and we both belonged to the Loma Linda Amateur Radio club; I thought I would ask him about this book. But when I asked him my questions, he didn't really answer anything. He basically smiled a lot and said a few things I can't even remember now. Come to think of it, I probably asked him all the wrong questions because, at the time, I probably didn't know enough to even ask what I needed to know.

It is only recently that this attitude of mine, of picking and choosing in the EGW writings, came to a sudden end. It happened when I came across a historic adventist website, (temcat.com) which had some sermons by David Bauer. He was an old-time Adventist pastor and spoke straight from what he understood things to be. In his sermons he leads us through the "bad" history of the twentieth century of the SDA church and all the doctrinal change. But he spoke from a conservative viewpoint. So, I was able to start piecing together what I had always missed before. He told things, as he said, the way things really happened because he himself actually experienced it!

Pastor Bauer says he started his ministry in 1940. After 26 or more years of working for the church, they fired him because he would not go along with the new theology nor would he follow what his leaders wanted him to do. He was told that he could not speak on certain subjects. But, he told them that it was not their right to tell him he could not preach from the Bible especially on subjects that the Spirit of Prophecy emphasized!

I liked the sermons so much that I downloaded the files and put them on my ipod so I could hear them again. I think they are life-changing sermons, at least for me they were, because they helped clear up a lot of issues. Things that I had not been taught right. I must warn you however, that the sermons can be perceived as being negative. Some people seem to pick up the negativity and not much else and they become anti-Adventist without the push to study and become close to God. On the other hand, I found that if we have a strong hold on what our message actually teaches and we understand the mission that God has given to us as a people, that these sermons can help give us a proper understanding of things. So, here is what it taught me.

I will relate the sermons to a special experience I had as a boy: Early on, I remember going to the White

Estates in a school outing (a field trip) when I was in 3rd grade at JNA (John Nevins Andrews Elementary School in Takoma Park Maryland). They showed us the fire-proof vault where her original writings were located, and they had fun things for us to do. They had the large Bible that Mrs. White had held out with one hand, I think, for 20 minutes. So, they had a few of us kids hold the Bible to see how long we could hold that Bible up with both of our hands. But I remember to this day what they told us on one issue especially. They said Mrs. White never gave us any of our doctrines! We were told that she only confirmed what had already been determined by the others in Bible study! I remember concluding at the time that this was important to remember because I believed what they said, even as a 3rd grader.

You see, when Barnhouse and Martin started interacting with SDA church leaders, they said that in order for us not to be labeled as a cult, Mrs. White could not have been instrumental in giving any of our doctrines. But now, after hearing Elder Bauer's sermons, I was finally able to see a different side of SDA history. The church leaders have been lying to us all along because of this threat of being labeled a cult. Walter Martin described the connection this way:

When I [Walter Martin] first met with L. E. Froom, **he took me to task for about fifteen minutes on how I could ever possibly think that Adventism was a cult. "Adventism rings as true as steel,"** . . . {videotaped conference interview with Walter Martin at Campus Hill Church in Loma Linda, California, January 26, 1989}

Later M. L. Andreasen pointed out that Walter Martin realized the Adventists did not want to be considered a cult:

The religious journal, Christianity Today, states in the March 3, 1958 issue, that **"the Adventists today are contending vigorously that they are truly evangelical. They appear to want to be so regarded."** Mentioning the book, Questions on Doctrine, it says that this **"is the Adventist answer to the question whether it ought to be thought of as a sect or a fellow evangelical denomination."** It states further that **"the book" is published in an effort to convince the religious world that we are evangelical and one of them.** {M. L. Andreasen, letter No. 6 letter to the Seventh-day Adventist Church, 1959, 'The Atonement' }

But now I have been armed with my own documents to determine what happened. I had the books and also I had the EGW CD-ROM! So, I could look-up the specific quotes where she said she went into vision and was able to tell the others how the various Scripture were to be understood. (In the following chapters these quotes will be brought out.) It took me a little while for it all to "sink in" but the truth I found in her writings have totally changed my thinking. David Bauer also talks about the war that has continually occurred between the church and Mrs White. (the specific webpage where David Bauer's 12 or 13 sermons are found is: <http://www.temcat.com/009-MP3s/MP3s.htm>)

I also found that Froom had actually lied by specifically leaving out the parts, from Mrs. Whites descriptions, that would help the reader understand what she was really saying. Froom made her writings say virtually the opposite of what she was really saying! I compared what he quoted with the original EGW text to determine this point.

As I thought about these things, I began to realize that Mrs. White's role was much like that of Christ's role. If you read the Gospels honestly, you will have to admit that Jesus is either the Son of God or He is speaking blaspheme. Jesus cannot be thought of as just a good man! Either He is the Son of God or He was an impostor! He cannot just be a good man because then He would be a liar. So, the only two options that we have are what the Jews accused Him of, and that of Christ's disciples who worshipped Him.

Now, the same can be said of Mrs. White. She is either a prophet of God that speaks for God or she is an impostor. So, at this point I have had to stop myself and ponder these things. I then began to realize further that

I could not continue to pick and choose what she says in her writings! I must either reject her all together or I must accept what she says.

I could not fully reject her writings because I had seen that her writings are really inspired. I have read them all my life and her books have made such an impact in my life that I have decided that I must devote more of my life to God. Even to the point of wanting to do some colporteur, to get these books out to the masses.

Now, I can not really become a colporteur when I only read and believe certain parts of her messages. How could my heart really be in the work? I must accept everything she has given to us if I'm to accept her at all! Now since that seed of mistrust was already within me, I knew that I needed help from God to be changed. I then had to ask God for the ability to accept all that she has given us and to actually see the wisdom in it all from the Bible.

In addition to my approach to Mrs. White, I have realized that the pillars of our faith were also something that I must also pay special attention to, since they are the major points of our faith that God has given us. She says these pillars are to stand till the end of time and that they are given to us for our survival. Of course some of these pillars are the very messages that I used to avoid because I just didn't believe they were correct. These, by the way, are also the very doctrines which are especially attacked by Satan.

The Road to Emmaus

While I was considering these things I suddenly saw something else that helped to confirm my understanding of Mrs White's role as a prophet of God. I saw that there was a parallel between the early Bible studies that helped lay the foundation of our Adventist faith (1 Selected Messages p 206-207) and with what happened to some of the disappointed disciples of Christ on the road to Emmaus (Luke 24:13-35). Jesus approached these disciples not by showing who He was. But instead, He appealed to the Old Testament Scripture that had already been prophesied concerning Him.

Jesus used Scripture as a basis for what happened. This agrees with the position we have today. We take as our ultimate source of knowledge from the Bible. If anything comes along, it must always square with the Bible! That must also be true of Mrs. White's writings. What she says must agree with what has come to us before in the Scriptures.

But something else happened on the road to Emmaus that I had not realized before. It is something that seems to be missed by most Adventists. Jesus, in His appealing to the Old Testament Scriptures; He literally told the disciples how these Scriptures ought to be understood. "He expounded to them in all the Scriptures the things concerning Himself." These disciples already knew of all these Scriptures but they had never put them together in their correct understanding. It was only when the texts were brought together by Jesus, before them, in the right way that they started to make any sense to them.

The Scriptures had been no help to them because they did not understand it. Thus, they were disappointed and discouraged because they thought He had been the one, the promised one! But now they were led to understand the Old Testament prophecies in their correct understanding and they could now see for themselves that these verses really did point to Jesus. They actually described what they had just experienced!

This is what was strongly brought to my attention: Jesus Himself came to give His disciples the correct understanding of the Scriptures concerning Himself and so these disciples were now able to look at these Scriptures in their correct understanding. They could see for themselves that it was the correct understanding because it explained virtually all of their own experience with Christ and His dying on the cross. So, even

though Jesus had to explain it to them, what He told them then became self-evident. Scripture actually was seen to explain itself. Thus, they could see for themselves that it was correct.

This same exact situation occurred with Mrs. White and the early Adventists shortly following 1844. The people were disappointed because Jesus had not come. Also, the Scriptures were not all the help they could have been since the believers did not understand it all. When they were in Bible study together they could get only so far in their understanding before everything would fall apart. They all had different opinions and things would begin to clash. Thus they would have to separate for the night and do more praying for more light and help. They could not understand what the Bible was saying. So, it was then that God responded to their need. In her own words, Mrs White describes what happened:

“The Spirit of the Lord would come upon me [Mrs. White], I would be taken off in vision, and a clear explanation of the passages we had been studying would be given me, with instruction as to how we were to labor and teach effectively. Thus light was given that helped us to understand the scriptures in regard to Christ, His mission, and His priesthood.” {1SM portion of 206.4}

It was a clear explanation. These people could now open the Bible and read these verses and understand for themselves what Mrs. White had just said was true. It was there in plain sight. The Scriptures spoke for themselves once they had a right understanding of its meaning. So, not only did The Spirit of the Lord appeal to Scripture as did Jesus did on the road to Emmaus, but the Holy Spirit also instructed his people in how these things were to be understood when the Adventist church was just in the process of forming. This is also the same experience that Christ’s disciples had on the road to Emmaus.

I often hear in sermons that our faith was and always has been based on the Bible and the Bible only. Now of course, they use this to direct us away from the use of Mrs. White. They are against the use of her writings. But I now believe the road to Emmaus example shows us that God sometimes has had to come and explain what the Bible actually says.

Jesus made sure that His church was started out with a correct view of Jesus and prophecy concerning Him. Also, in addition, I believe that conditions will be so bad at the end of time, that God will again choose to do something special for His last-day church. He has already done so. God has ensured that His people will have that essential knowledge they will need in order to survive and be saved in this time of the end. Satan will hit them with everything he can to destroy the church. Also, this will be a time when God’s people will have to live without an intercessor and so special help will be needed.

We must know how we are to be saved and to have the power He gives us to give us victory. We are also to know who God and His Son really are and not some pagan understanding of a trinity that everyone else seems to believe. This knowledge of God and His Son will help us, to understand to a much deeper level, His love for us. And this knowledge will support the doctrines that God Himself has given us. So, God directed the church with direct messages to Christ’s disciples at the very beginning of the church, and God has also directed the last-day church to have specific messages at the very end of this world’s history. Because of what we read in Acts 2, I even expect more direction to come to His church.

17 And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, **I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams:**

18 And on my servants and on my handmaidens **I will pour out in those days of my Spirit; and they shall prophesy:** Acts 2:17-18

There will be many false prophets as well. So we must test the prophecies.

20 **Despise not prophesyings.**

21 **Prove all things; hold fast that which is good.** 1 Thessalonians 5:20-21

20 To the law and to the testimony: **if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them.** Isaiah 8:20

Thus I now believe that Mrs White has not only directed our attention to the Bible, but she has also shown us how the Bible can be understood. When the Bible is seen in its correct light, it will explain itself and the truth will be self-evident. It is God giving us this information! So now, when I study the Bible, I see that indeed it is true. What she has written, I also find in the Bible.

I have especially seen this in the writing of my Michael the Archangel study (<http://www.creation-science-prophecy.com/michael.htm>). From Mrs. White, I knew that Michael the Archangel was actually Jesus. But I didn't really know that the Bible said much of anything on the subject. But when I started looking I really hit "pay dirt". Her writings led me to what the Bible had said all along on Michael the Archangel, plain and simple. Yet we as Adventist usually refer to Mrs. White on these kinds of things. We must also look for these things especially in the Bible so we can use our Bible knowledge in teaching others!

9. The truth about God and His Son are Pillar Doctrines of the SDA Church

These were doctrines that were given to us by God. God is the architect of our understanding of the Bible through direct intervention and they have stood the test of time.

As was presented in the introduction, I already knew about the original pillars of our faith. But I was really surprised to find that the personality of God and Jesus (The identity of who God the Father and Jesus the Son really are) was actually one of the original pillars of our faith. It is part of the faith that God gave our Adventist church. And of course, it is found all throughout the Bible.

I had never heard of this issue before but it really shook me up! I had always thought that the Trinity god doctrine was true. As a boy I had reasoned that the trinity was something like a human marriage except that there were three who worked together in the same goals. However, this now really made me to stop and take special notice. I had to ask myself what truth really is, in respect to God Himself.

In this chapter, we will go over the evidence showing how and why the pillars of our faith were given to us as a church. The value of these pillars, the foundation of our faith, will become self-evident as we begin to see the urgency that is placed in holding on to these doctrines. Also, in the following chapter, we will study the prophecies concerning how Satan will try to take these pillars away from us. Unfortunately, for most of the church, he has already been quite successful in having SDA church members take on new and different doctrines which I believe are of Satanic origin. They follow the doctrines of most of the other Christian churches in the world which are Calvinist in nature. Adventists have always had Arminian in nature.

God the Master Builder

When I was in third grade, as I described in the last chapter, I was told that all our doctrines were discovered by intense Bible study; Not with the help of prophetic inspiration. This idea could allow us to think that if we originally derived our doctrines by plain Bible study, we might conceivably continue to study and uncover new things we haven't understood before. So, one day, we as a church, might change our mind on what the Bible teaches. This would allow new doctrines to replace the old doctrines because of Bible study. Because we all change our minds on various things and we often gain better insights, even as a church.

However, when I started to search into Adventist history by reading very specific quotes in the Spirit of Prophecy and also from some of the original pioneers, I discovered that it was God who gave us our doctrines. Over and over again, Mrs. White says that it is God who was the Master builder of what we believe. He is the one who has given us our firm platform of doctrines on which we will stand till Jesus comes in the clouds of glory.

So, if God specifically gave us truth from the very beginning, and if it really is truth, then why would there ever be a time when we would think to change our major doctrines that have been given to us? It would only be at a time of apostasy. God always gives to His people what is needed and in the last days it will be very important that we will have the full Gospel that is described in the Bible. Now look at these descriptions of what God did for us:

I was again brought down through these messages, and saw **how dearly the people of God had purchased their experience**. It had been obtained through much suffering and severe conflict. **God had led them along step by step, until He had placed them upon a solid, immovable platform.**

I saw individuals approach the *platform* and examine the *foundation*. Some with rejoicing immediately stepped upon it. Others commenced to find fault with the *foundation*. They wished improvements made, and then the *platform* would be more perfect, and the people much happier.

Some stepped off the *platform* to examine it and declared it to be laid wrong. But I saw that nearly all stood firm upon the *platform* and exhorted those who had stepped off to cease their complaints, **for God was the Master Builder**, and they were fighting against Him.

They recounted the wonderful work of God, which had led them to the firm platform, and in unison raised their eyes to heaven and with a loud voice glorified God.” {Early Writings p. 259}

There has always been some who have questioned our firm foundation. They thought our doctrines should be more like the other Calvinist Protestant churches. However, God is our Master Builder who has given us a solid platform of truth and this truth will help us stand amid the storm and tempest of the last days of this earth. This is why we need it!

“Where are the watchmen that ought to be standing on the walls of Zion? Are they asleep? **This foundation was built by the Masterworker, and will stand storm and tempest.** Will they permit this man to present doctrines that deny the past experience of the people of God? The time has come to take decided action.”
{Series B, No. 2 p 54 last part of the 2nd paragraph Also Selected Messages book 1 p 204 last part of the 1st paragraph}

Not one pin or pillar is to be changed or moved from our truth. They have been given to us from the early days by God, the Master Builder, and its truth will stand in every particular.

I do not wish to ignore or drop one link in the **chain of evidence that was formed as, after the passing of the time in 1844**, little companies of seekers after truth met together to study the Bible and to ask God for light and guidance. . . . The truth, point by point, was fastened in our minds so firmly that we could not doubt. . . . The evidence given in our early experience has the same force that it had then. **The truth is the same as it ever has been**, and **not a pin or a pillar can be moved from the structure of truth**. That which was sought for out of the **Word in 1844, 1845, and 1846 remains the truth in every particular**. {Letter 38, 1906, pp. 1, 2. (To the Wahroonga Sanitarium Family, January 23, 1906.)} {1MR 52.2}

Among the pillars of truth, the old landmarks are the sanctuary and the personality of God and Christ. So many have missed this truth; But it is one of the truths that has made us what we are. God has led us forward step by step and if we wish to be on the right side in the time ahead of us, we will want to stand on God’s unmovable platform of truth.

Let not any man enter upon the work of tearing down the **foundations of the truth that have made us what we are**. **God has led His people forward step by step** though there were pitfalls of error on every side. Under the wonderful guidance of a plain, “Thus saith the Lord,” a truth has been established that has stood the test of trial. When men arise and attempt to draw away disciples after them, meet them with the truths that have been tried as by fire.

[Revelation 3:1-3 quoted:

1 And unto the angel of the church in Sardis write; These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars; I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and art dead.

2 Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die: for I have not found thy works perfect before God.

3 Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard, and **hold fast**, and **repent**. If therefore thou

shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee.]

Those who seek to remove **the old landmarks** are not holding fast; they are **not remembering how they have received and heard**. Those who try to bring in theories that would remove **the pillars of our faith** concerning **the sanctuary** or concerning **the personality of God or of Christ**, are working as blind men. They are seeking to bring in uncertainties and to set the people of God adrift without an anchor. {Manuscript Release No. 760: The Integrity of the Sanctuary Truth p 9.3-4}

If we really study the truth in the Bible and the Spirit of Prophecy we will find out that the platform of truth, that we have been given, admits of no compromise. When Mrs. White says that the foundation of truth has made us what we are, what does she mean by that?

In the early days, Adventists knew their Bibles in such a way that no other group could match it. In addition, we had a purpose and the needed knowledge to do God's bidding. They knew that Jesus is coming again and we need to be ready! Mrs. White prophesied that a new movement with new doctrines would appear. But we must repudiate everything that is not in harmony with this truth. It is the truth of the Bible which will help us.

“Who has authority to begin such a movement? We have our Bibles. We have our experience, **attested to by the miraculous working of the Holy Spirit. We have a truth that admits of no compromise. Shall we not repudiate everything that is not in harmony with this truth?**“ {Series B, No. 2 p 55 1st paragraph Also Selected Messages book 1 p 205 paragraph 1}

It is through the miraculous workings of the Holy Spirit that we have this truth which is needed for this time of the end.

We are God's commandment-keeping people. For the past fifty years every phase of heresy has been brought to bear upon us, to becloud our minds regarding the teaching of the word, -- especially concerning **the ministration of Christ in the heavenly sanctuary**, and the **message of heaven for these last days**, as given by the angels of the fourteenth chapter of Revelation. Messages of every order and kind have been urged upon Seventh-day Adventists, to take the place of **the truth which, point by point, has been sought out by prayerful study, and testified to by the miracle-working power of the Lord. But the way-marks which have made us what we are, and to be preserved, and they will be preserved, as God has signified through His word and the testimony of His Spirit. He calls upon us to hold firmly, with the grip of faith, to the fundamental principles that are based upon unquestionable authority.** {Series B, No. 2 p 59 paragraph 1 Also Selected Messages book 1 p 207? }

The truth we have been given, point by point, was sought out by prayerful study and it is based upon the highest unquestionable authority, the Bible and the Spirit of Prophecy.

God Answered Prayer by Visions Thus God Provided a Sure Foundation

This is how the Spirit of God would lead out:

On some occasions the Spirit of God would come upon me, and **difficult portions were made clear through God's appointed way**, and then there was perfect harmony. We were all of one mind and one Spirit. {*Search the Scriptures*“ RH July 26, 1892}

It was God's purpose to establish the early Adventists in the faith by helping them understand truth. They had to face one error after another so they would get together for Bible Study and pray for answers. And the

Lord would answer showing what is truth. It is then that they found the perfect harmony found in Scriptures.

I know and understand that we are to be established in the faith, in the light of the truth given us in our early experience. At that time [after the 1844 disappointment] one error after another pressed in upon us; ministers and doctors brought in new doctrines. **We would search the Scriptures with much prayer, and the Holy Spirit would bring the truth to our minds.** Sometimes **whole nights would be devoted to searching the Scriptures, and earnestly asking God for guidance.** Companies of devoted men and women assembled for this purpose. **The power of God would come upon me, and I was enabled clearly to define what is truth and what is error.** {Manuscript Releases, vol. 8, p. 319, Letter 50, 1906}

Here is another account of this same process. Here we find that Mrs. White's mind was locked and she could not understand the subject until she was taken off into vision. She was then instructed on the meaning of the Scriptures.

In the early days of the message, when our numbers were few, **we studied diligently to understand the meaning of many scriptures. At times it seemed as if no explanation could be given. My mind seemed to be locked to an understanding of the Word;** but when our brethren who had assembled for study, **came to a point where they could go no farther, and had recourse to earnest prayer, the Spirit of God would rest upon me, and I would be taken off in vision, and be instructed in regard to the relation of scripture to scripture. These experiences were repeated over and over and over again.** Thus many truths of the third angel's message were established, point by point. Think you that my faith in this message will ever waver? Think you that I can remain silent, when I see an effort being made to sweep away the foundation pillars of our faith? I am as thoroughly established in these truths as it is possible for a person to be. I can never forget the experience I have passed through. God has confirmed my belief by many evidences of his power. {The Review and Herald: RH, June 14, 1906 par. 18}

It was when the group could go no farther in their study that the Spirit of God would rest on Mrs. White and she would be told what would solve their understanding.

Sometimes the problems were so urgent that they would be together the whole night asking God for guidance. So the urgency of these meetings was evident. And the Lord would answer their urgent prayers. When Mrs. White was taken in vision, she was then able to define what was truth. Back at that time, the main points of our faith, as they were known in the church until 1915 were established.

The truths given us after the passing of the time in 1844 are just as certain and unchangeable as **when the Lord gave them to us in answer to our urgent prayers. The visions that the Lord has given me are so remarkable that we know that what we have accepted is the truth.** This was demonstrated by the Holy Spirit. Light, precious light from God, **established the main points of our faith as we hold them today [in 1906].** {Manuscript Releases, vol. 1, p. 53; Letter 50, 1906}

It is because we know that the Lord has given us the truth for these last days that we can be confident in knowing that we have the correct doctrines. We can now search the Scriptures to confirm that we have the correct doctrines. No other group has such a grasp of the Scriptures. The working of the Holy Spirit does not result in lies:

We can confidently say, **The truth that has come to us through the Holy Spirit's working is not a lie. The evidences given for the last half century bear the evidence of the Spirit's power** {The Paulson Collection of Ellen G. White Letters, p. 257, June 23, 1905, letter to G. I. Butler}.

We are to keep these truths as our faith because they have been substantiated by the Holy Spirit of God.

Ever we are to keep the faith that has been substantiated by the Holy Spirit of God from the earlier events of our experience until the present time {The Upward Look, p. 352; from Letter 326 to W. C. White, December 4, 1905 “After The Way Which They Call Heresy”}

This next quote is possibly the most detailed account of how our church was led into the truths we have as a people. She tells us that many do not realize how firmly the foundation of our faith (the basic doctrines) have been laid.

I have been hoping that there would be a thorough reformation, and that the principles for which we fought in the early days, and which were brought but in the power of the Holy Spirit, would be maintained.

Many of our people do not realize how firmly the foundation of our faith has been laid. My husband, Elder Joseph Bates, Father Pierce, Elder Edson, and others who were keen, noble, and true, were among those who, after the passing of the time in 1844 searched for the truth as for hidden treasure. I met with them, and we studied and prayed earnestly. Often we remained together until late at night, and sometimes through the entire night, praying for light and studying the word. Again and again these brethren came together to study the Bible, in order that they might know its meaning, and be prepared to teach it with power. “When they came to the point in their study where they said, ‘We can do nothing more,’ the Spirit of the Lord would come upon me, I would be taken off in vision, and **a clear explanation of the passages we had been studying would be given me, with instruction as to how we were to labor and teach effectively. Thus light was given that helped us to understand the scriptures in regard to Christ, His mission, and His priesthood. A line of truth extending from that time to the time when we shall enter the city of God, was made plain to me, and I gave to others the instruction that the Lord had given me.**”

During this whole time I could not understand the reasoning of the brethren. **My mind was locked**, as it were, and I could not comprehend the meaning of the scriptures we were studying. This was one of the greatest sorrows of my life. I was in this condition of mind until all the principal points of our faith were made clear to our minds, in harmony with the word of God. The brethren knew that when not in vision, I could not understand these matters, and they accepted as light direct from heaven the revelations given.

For two or three years my mind continued to be locked to an understanding of the Scriptures. In the course of our labors, my husband and I visited Father Andrews, who was suffering intensely with inflammatory rheumatism. We prayed for him. I laid my hands on his hand, and said, “Father Andrews, the Lord Jesus maketh thee whole.” He was healed instantly. He got up, and walked about the room, praising God, and saying, “I never saw it on this wise before. Angels of God are in this room.” The glory of the Lord was revealed. Light seemed to shine all through the house, and an angel’s hand was laid upon my head. **From that time to this I have been able to understand the word of God.** Series B, No. 2 p. 56 paragraph 3 to p, 57 paragraph 2 Also Selected Messages book 1 p 206-207. Much or all also found at {RH May 25, 1905, par. 21-24}

It wasn’t until the doctrines were already determined that Mrs. White could understand the doctrines for herself. This was specially done by God so that the others would know that what she said was from God and not from her. Because otherwise, during that whole time, she could not understand any of our points of doctrine.

. . . We are to repeat the words of the pioneers in our work, who knew what it cost to search for the truth as for hidden treasure, and **who labored to lay the foundation of our work. They moved forward step by step under the influence of the Spirit of God.** One by one these pioneers are passing away. The word given me is, Let that which these men have written in the past be produced. And in the signs of the times. . . .

Not long ago I took up a copy of the Bible Echo. As I looked it through, I saw an article by Elder Haskell and one by Elder Corliss. As I laid the paper down, I said, these articles must be reproduced. There is truth and power in them. Men spoke as they were moved by the Holy Spirit.

Let the truths that are the foundation of our faith be kept before the people. Some will depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils. They talk science, and the enemy comes in and gives them an abundance of science; but it is not the science of salvation. It is not the science of humility, of

consecration, or of the sanctification of the Spirit. **We are now to understand what the pillars of our faith are,—the truths that have made us as a people what we are, leading us on step by step.** {RH May 25, 1905, par. 23}

We must understand that those who will depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and the doctrines of devils. They will in fact be walking away from the pillars of our faith. In the last paragraph above, it is clear what the attack of Satan will be and it is exactly what has happened to God's church.

We must know what the pillars of our faith are, and be able to explain them using the Bible, because many will come with doctrines of devils to try to confuse us. Brothers and sisters, this has already happened. Our doctrines concerning the very foundation of our faith has been changed. Today, the church has what has been called the new theology and it opposes the very truth found in the pillars of our faith.

Did Mrs. White Change Her Mind?

Here is the short answer on whether Mrs. White Changed her mind. She assures us that the message she bears today is the same that she has always born.

“I understood that some were anxious to know if Mrs. White still held the same views that she did years ago when they had heard her speak in the sanitarium grove, in the Tabernacle, and at the camp-meetings held in the suburbs of Battle Creek. **I assured them that the message she bears today is the same that she has borne during the sixty years of her public ministry. She has the same service to do for the Master that was laid upon her in her girlhood.** She receives lessons from the same Instructor. The directions given her are, “Make known to others what I have revealed to you. Write out the messages that I give you, that the people may have them.” This is what she has endeavored to do.” {E. G. White, Review and Herald, July 26, 1906 par. 20} {1 Selected Messages p. 35. (1906) }

This would have been the perfect time to say that she now believed in the Trinity. However, what she says is that she still taught what she taught 50 years ago!

I appreciate the truth, **every jot of it**, just as it has been given to me by the Holy Spirit for the **last fifty years**. **I desire everyone to know that I stand on the same platform of truth that we have maintained for more than half a century.** That is the testimony I desire to bear on the day that I am seventy-eight years of age.--Ms 142, 1905, pp. 1, 2. {4MR 44.5}

There is a good reason why Mrs. White appreciated every jot of the truth that God gave our church. We must not forget this point! She stood on the same platform of truth for over 50 years (at the time of her writing, 1905) because it is as certain as God lives that we have the truth!

But evil men with strong delusions will seem very sincere and try to deceive all who know the truth. Satan has a vested interest in this activity because he wants us to get rid of the truth that God has revealed for these last days. Without this truth we will not be able to become victorious over Satan and all sin.

No man can serve God without uniting against himself evil men and evil angels. Evil spirits will be put upon the track of every soul that seeks to join the ranks of Christ, for Satan wishes to recover the prey taken from his grasp. **Evil men will give themselves over to believe strong delusions**, that they may be damned. **These men will put on the garments of sincerity and deceive, if possible, the very elect.** {4T 595.3}

It is as certain that we have the truth as that God lives; and Satan, with all his arts and hellish power, cannot change the truth of God into a lie. While the great adversary will try his utmost to make of none effect the word of God, truth must go forth as a lamp that burneth. {4T 595.4}

The Lord has singled us out and made us subjects of His marvelous mercy. Shall we be charmed with the pratings of the apostate? Shall we choose to take our stand with Satan and his host? Shall we join with the transgressors of God's law? Rather let it be our prayer: "Lord, put enmity between me and the serpent." If we are not at enmity with his works of darkness, his powerful folds encircle us, and his sting is ready at any moment to be driven to our hearts. We should count him a deadly foe. We should oppose him in the name of Christ. Our work is still onward. We must battle for every inch of ground. Let all who name the name of Christ clothe themselves with the armor of righteousness. {4T 595.5}

In a special way we have been given truth that came directly from God. In fact, God has singled us out so that we may be subjects of His marvelous mercy. That does not mean that we will be saved and everyone else will lose out, no. But it means we will receive His grace, just like Christ's disciples who preached the second coming of Christ after Jesus left them for heaven. We are to preach and teach this message of the Gospel, the three angels' messages to the world!

Of course, Satan is trying to make the word of God of none effect. He will try to make the truth something to be ignored. Thus, we must have enmity against the serpent so that He will not be able to encircle us with his deadly darkness of error.

So, we are to no longer consent to listen without protest anything that undermines the foundation pillars of our faith. We must not be quiet when these men and Satan are leading people into deadly falsehood:

No longer consent to listen without protest to the perversion of truth. Unmask the pretentious sophistries which, if received, will lead ministers and physicians and medical missionary workers to ignore the truth...

I have been instructed to warn our people; **for many are in danger of receiving theories and sophistries that undermine the foundation pillars of the faith....** I call upon those who have been connected with these binding influences **to break the yoke to which they have long submitted, and stand as free men in Christ. Nothing but a determined effort will break the spell that is upon them.**

Be not deceived, many will depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils. We have now before us the alpha of this danger. The omega will be of a most startling nature." {1 Selected Messages p. 196.197}

We need to stand as free men in Christ and work to break the yoke that has caught others in the snare. Because many of us are in danger of receiving the theories and sophistries of Satan which undermine the foundation pillars of the faith.

We are now in the omega apostacy. This is the trouble that Mrs. White was worried about and she trembled for God's people. So, we must not be deceived, because many will leave the doctrines of our faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils.

In the Reformation, the Protestants were able to leave the Catholic church and some of its teachings. However, there are still many of its teachings that the Protestants still believe. These teachings actually come from Pagan sources since the Catholic church brought in Pagan teachings to try to allow the masses to join their church.

Thus, we need to keep to the truth that God gave us and not allow the omega apostacy to bring us back into Pagan beliefs. So, we need to be careful to actually present sound arguments that will awaken conviction in people's mind that we might help save them from this deadly trap of the last days.

Agitate, agitate, agitate. The subjects which we present to the world must be to us a living reality. It is

important that in defending the doctrines which we consider fundamental articles of faith we should never allow ourselves to employ arguments that are not wholly sound. These may avail to silence an opposer, but they do not honor the truth. **We should present sound arguments**, that will not only silence our opponents, but will bear the closest and most searching scrutiny. With those who have educated themselves as debaters there is great danger that they will not handle the word of God with fairness. **In meeting an opponent it should be our earnest effort to present subjects in such a manner as to awaken conviction in his mind**, instead of seeking merely to give confidence to the believer. {5T.708.001}

What are the Pillars of Our Faith?

In the past many have stumbled over the pillars of our faith.

In Minneapolis God gave precious gems of truth to His people in new settings. This light from heaven by some was rejected with all the stubbornness the Jews manifested in rejecting Christ, and **there was much talk about standing by the old landmarks. But there was evidence they knew not what the old landmarks were**. There was evidence and there was reasoning from the word that commended itself to the conscience; but the minds of men were fixed, sealed against the entrance of light, because they had decided it was a dangerous error removing the “old landmarks” when it was not moving a peg of the old landmarks, **but they had perverted ideas of what constituted the old landmarks**. {CW 30.1}

Just like in the past, I believe that Adventists have forgotten what the old landmarks are. Some are unaware of these pillars, others hold some but not others. Let's see what the original pillars of our faith actually are.

In these statements Mrs White used a few words almost interchangeably: Old landmarks, pillars, foundation, and platform. The old landmarks or pillars make up the foundation or platform of truth. Now, as far as I know, a complete list of pillars can be obtained by studying the five Spirit of Prophecy quotes below: (There are many other quotes which duplicate and say the same thing.)

The theme of greatest importance is the third angel's message, embracing the messages of the first and second angels. **All should understand the truths contained in these messages and demonstrate them in daily life, for this is essential to salvation**. We shall have to study earnestly, prayerfully, in order to understand these grand truths.--Letter 97, 1902. {Counsels to Writers and Editors page 29 par. 3}

The passing of the time in 1844 was a period of great events, opening to our astonished eyes **the cleansing of the sanctuary transpiring in heaven, and having decided relation to God's people upon the earth**, [also] **the first and second angels' messages and the third**, unfurling the banner on which was inscribed, “**The commandments of God and the faith of Jesus**.” One of the landmarks under this message was **the temple of God**, seen by His truth-loving people in heaven, and **the ark containing the law of God**. The light of **the Sabbath** of the fourth commandment flashed its strong rays in the pathway of the transgressors of God's law. The **nonimmortality of the wicked** is an old landmark. I can call to mind nothing more that can come under the head of the old landmarks. All this cry about changing the old landmarks is all imaginary. {Counsels to Writers and Editors page 30 par. 2}

In the next chapter we will study the changes in doctrine of our church. But I want to go over an experience that I have witnessed which showed me the real change that was happening to the SDA church!

When I was a boy, aged nine and younger, this would have been the late 1950s up to 1963, I remember our pastor asking us in his sermon, to the congregation, what our purpose was as a church. What are we to be doing? What is the major theme of greatest importance?

Even as a young boy, I knew what the answer would be, this kind of question was brought up to us more than once. I remember a few people calling out that “our work was to proclaim The Three Angel’s Messages!” I remember that well and it made a strong impression on my mind!

The three angels of Revelation 14 are represented as flying in the midst of heaven, symbolizing the work of those who proclaim the first, second, and third angels’ messages. All are linked together. The evidences of the abiding, everliving truth of these grand messages, that mean so much to the church, that have awakened such intense opposition from the religious world, are not extinct. . . . {6T 17.4}

We see before us a special work to be done. We are now to pray as never before for the Holy Spirit’s guidance. Let us seek the Lord with the whole heart, that we may find him. **We have received the light of the three angels’ messages**; and we need now to come decidedly to the front, and take our position on the side of truth. {RH, October 13, 1904 par. 1}

Years later, in the 1990s, I remember being in an Adventist church in Oregon and the very same question was asked. What is our purpose as a church? What are we to be doing? And right away, I remembered my experience as a child and I wanted to voice out the answer. But I kept silent. There was however someone else who said it. But he was a lone voice. I remember being disappointed at the time because the answer that was really wanted, by that time, was “to preach the righteousness of Christ”, and many then voiced that answer.

My thought at the time was how times had changed. Even the common people of the Adventist Church had changed. I have thought about this event a few times since then and it has helped me to side for the message that God has given us. I decided that I should be searching for real truth.

The only safety now is to search for the truth as revealed in the word of God, as for hid treasure. **The subjects of the Sabbath, the nature of man, and the testimony of Jesus** are the great and important truths to be understood; these will prove as an anchor to hold God’s people in these perilous times. But the mass of mankind despise the truths of God’s word and prefer fables. 2 Thessalonians 2:10, 11: “Because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie.” {Testimonies for the Church, vol. 1, p. 300 par. 1}

Those who seek to remove the **old landmarks** are not holding fast; they are not remembering how they have received and heard. Those who try to bring in theories that would remove the **pillars of our faith** concerning **the sanctuary** or concerning **the personality of God or of Christ** are working as blind men. They are seeking to bring in uncertainties and to **set the people of God adrift without an anchor**. {YRP *Ye Shall Receive Power* 235.4} and {Manuscript Release No. 760 page 9 par. 6}

. . . We are now to understand what the pillars of our faith are,--the truths that have made us as a people what we are, **leading us on step by step**. {RH, May 25, 1905 par. 23}

After the passing of the time in 1844 we searched for the truth as for hidden treasure. I met with the brethren, and we studied and prayed earnestly. Often we remained together until late at night, and sometimes through the entire night, praying for light and studying the Word. Again and again these brethren came together to study the Bible, in order that they might know its meaning, and be prepared to teach it with power. When they came to the point in their study where they said, “We can do nothing more,” the Spirit of the Lord would come upon me. I would be taken off in vision, and a clear explanation of the passages we had been studying would be given me, with instruction as to how we were to labor and teach effectively. Thus light was given that helped us to understand the scriptures in regard **to Christ, his mission, and his priesthood**. A line of truth extending from that time to the time when we shall enter the city of God, was made plain to me, and I gave to others the instruction that the Lord had given me. {RH, May 25, 1905 par. 24}

The scripture which above all others had been both **the foundation and the central pillar of the advent faith** was the declaration: “**Unto two thousand and three hundred days; then shall the sanctuary be cleansed.**” **Daniel 8:14**. These had been familiar words to all believers in the Lord’s soon coming. By the lips of thousands was this prophecy repeated as the watchword of their faith. All felt that upon the events therein foretold depended their brightest expectations and most cherished hopes. These prophetic days had been shown to terminate in the autumn of 1844. In common with the rest of the Christian world, Adventists then held that the earth, or some portion of it, was the sanctuary. They understood that the cleansing of the sanctuary was the purification of the earth by the fires of the last great day, and that this would take place at the second advent. Hence the conclusion that Christ would return to the earth in 1844. {GC 409.1}

Putting the information together we have the following list of pillars that make up the foundation of truth that was given to us by God.

The Theme of the SDA church is:

The Three Angel’s Messages

The Foundation and Central Pillar of the Advent Faith:

Unto two thousand and three hundred days; then shall the sanctuary be cleansed. Daniel 8:14

The Pillars of our Faith are:

1. The personality of God and Jesus (Who God and Jesus are)
2. The law of God including the Seventh-day Sabbath
3. The faith of Jesus (Christ, His mission, His priesthood)
4. The Two Compartment Heavenly Sanctuary
Including: the Temple of God, the Ark containing the law of God, Christ's priesthood, Cleansing of the Sanctuary transpiring in Heaven, and having decided relation to God’s people upon the earth.
5. The Three Angels' Messages (The first, second, and third angels with a fourth angel Rev. 14 & 18)
6. The testimony of Jesus (includes: The Spirit of Prophecy)
7. The nature of man
8. The Non-Immortality of the wicked (includes: the state of the dead)

So, these are the sure pillars of our faith. The platform of eternal truth that the Adventist people have been given. We can see that there is some overlap. The Faith of Jesus with his mission and priesthood overlaps with the Sanctuary doctrine. The Faith of Jesus with the subject of Christ and his mission also overlaps somewhat with the personality of God and Jesus. But I placed them all on the list because Mrs. White mentions them that way. It might help us to appreciate the truth we have to a fuller measure.

We Must Hold-on to the Pillars of Our Faith

Not only for the first 50 or so years, but ever since the beginning, we have been attacked with every kind of heresy. Lately, the enemy has been more successful in forcing our people to lose the pillars of our faith in their understanding. But Seventh-day Adventists are going to take their stand for the truth in the last days.

I am instructed to say to those who endeavor to tear down the foundation that has made us Seventh-day Adventists: We are God’s commandment keeping people. For the past fifty years every phase of heresy has been brought to bear upon us, to becloud our minds regarding the teaching of the Word--especially concerning **the ministration of Christ in the heavenly sanctuary, and the message of heaven for these last days, as given**

by the angels of the fourteenth chapter of Revelation. Messages of every order and kind have been urged upon Seventh-day Adventists, to take the place of the truth which, point by point, has been sought out by prayerful study and testified to by the miracle-working power of the Lord. But the waymarks which have made us what we are, **are to be preserved, and they will be preserved,** as God has signified through His word and the testimonies of His Spirit. **He calls upon us to hold firmly with the grip of faith, to the fundamental principles that are based upon unquestionable authority.** {4MR 246.1}

10. Mrs. White warned us about big changes that were coming when she was gone.

Satan and His Evil Angels Have a Specific Reason why they Hate the Doctrine of God and His Only Begotten Son

Danger is Approaching

Around the turn of the century, Mrs. White started to speak out on this topic because God was indicating in the night that danger was approaching for our church. Apparently what was in danger of falling was the foundation principles of our faith.

“About the time that “Living Temple” was published, there passed before me in the night season, representations indicating that **some danger was approaching**, and that **I must prepare for it by writing out the things God had revealed to me regarding the foundation principles of our faith.**” {Series B, No. 2 p 52 3rd paragraph Also Selected Messages book 1 p 202 paragraph 3}

Notice that when the *Living Temple* was being published, Mrs. White was warned of some danger that was yet approaching. That means the danger actually involves something more than just the *Living Temple* published by Kellogg.

As a people, **we are to stand firm on the platform of eternal truth** that has withstood test and trial. We are to hold to **the sure pillars of our faith**. The principles of truth **that God has revealed to us are our only true foundation**. **They have made us what we are**. The lapse of time has not lessened their value. **It is the constant effort of the enemy to remove these truths** from their setting, and to put in their place spurious theories. He will bring in everything that he possibly can to carry out his deceptive designs. {Series B, No. 2 p 51 2nd paragraph Also Selected Messages book 1 p 201 paragraph 2}

Mrs. White bids us to stand firm on the platform of eternal truth that God has revealed to us. This truth is so important that it has shaped our religious experience, thus, it has made us as Seventh-day Adventist, what we are. We are being trained to preach the three angel’s messages! This truth is so important that Satan has waged a constant warfare against it. It is his purpose to remove our message from our vocabulary.

We want solid ground for our feet in times like this. Our only safety as we enter the time of the end is to believe, teach, and live these same truths that God gave us. These are the truths that Mrs. White taught for over 50 years of life.

In the future, deception of every kind is to arise, and **we want solid ground for our feet. We want solid pillars for the building. Not one pin is to be removed from that which the Lord has established**. The enemy will bring in false theories, such as **the doctrine that there is no sanctuary**. This is one of the points on which there will be a departing from the faith. **Where shall we find safety unless it be in the truths that the Lord has been giving for the last fifty years**. {R&H May 25, 1905 page 17.11}

The one example Mrs. White mentions is the sanctuary in heaven, which has possibly been attacked more than any other doctrine (aside from the truth about God). There must be a real good reason why Satan has

especially attacked this doctrine. The reason is simple: The truth of the Sanctuary Doctrine helps by teaching us how we can get rid of sin and to become free from sin as well. When we consider that the 144,000 will actually live after the close of probation, which will be a time when sin will not be forgiven any longer. So, at that time, God's people must be free from sin and they will also have to be so close to God and their Savior that they will be able to grab hold of Christ's divine arm to keep them from sinning. This means the Sanctuary doctrine is really the kind of truth that will be especially needed as we approach the end of time. Thus we are to depend on the truths that He has given us. We had these truths for the first fifty or so years of the early time of our church and we must remember that God Himself is the Masterworker of our foundation of truth.

The Alpha Attack on the Personality of God

The personality of God and Jesus were the first of the pillars to be attacked after Mrs. White died. We saw this in the introduction of this paper. Today, even most of the independent ministers who preach against the evils of the "New Theology", they still continue to support the Trinity doctrine. At one point in time, when the church pointed out to them that if they wanted to go back to the original beliefs, as Historic Adventists, that they should believe in the Father and Son rather than the Trinity. Because that is what the Adventist pioneers believed. But they would not budge. Instead of going back to the Adventist belief when Mrs. White was alive, they wish to believe as the church believed in the 1940s so that they could keep the Trinity doctrine.

Many remember the 1940s as a safe and conservative time in the church because it is before most of the New Theology came into the church. So, they see the condition of the church in that time as something to adopt and to hold in high esteem. But in the 1940s, Mrs. White had already died which allowed some of the leaders to start bringing in error into the church. Already, the Trinity was being taught to the ministerial students but all the other "New Theology" doctrines had not made their appearance yet.

This situation with conservative Historic Adventists is similar to what happened long ago at the Council of Trent (1545 - 1563) The Protestants said they only followed the Bible for their standard of faith yet they still kept Sunday in spite of their stand on the Bible. The Catholics pointed it out to them that Sunday was not in the Bible and could only be supported by Catholic sources. So they said the Protestants were not consistent. They "didn't have a leg to stand on" yet they never gave up Sunday worship. (See page 159 for more of the details)

Let's study into the personality of God and see how it was attacked.

In the book *Living Temple* there is presented **the alpha of deadly heresies. The omega will follow, and will be received by those who are not willing to heed the warning God has given**". {1st Selected Messages • 1SM 200.1 last part}

Mrs. White identifies the alpha apostasy as a deadly heresy. Obviously this is a serious thing but we are also warned of an Omega apostasy that is also to come and all who neglect to heed God's warning about the Omega will be caught up in the Omega heresy. Today, how many Adventists are concerned about the warning to keep from the omega apostasy?

So, what kind of warning did God give concerning the alpha and omega apostasies? Here is one statement:

Living Temple contains **the alpha of these theories. I knew that the omega would follow in a little while; and I trembled for our people**. "I knew that **I must warn our brethren and sisters not to enter into controversy over the presence and personality of God**. The statements made in "Living Temple" in regard to this point are incorrect. The Scripture used to substantiate the doctrine there set forth, is Scripture misapplied." {1st Selected Messages • 1SM 203.2}

Dr. John Harvey Kellogg wrote *The Living Temple* in 1903 because the Battle Creek Sanitarium had burned down and his book on the health of the body was to help pay for the new Sanitarium. The problem is that there were also misapplied Scripture on the presence and personality of God woven through the book.

Here is a warning. In addition to the Alpha, she warned that a second danger was to follow and it was so bad that she trembled for us. In addition we are warned on what the controversy is going to be about. It will be about the presence and personality of God! Thus we are not to enter into this controversy on the presence and personality of God.

So, what was Dr. Kellogg doing? Here is a clue:

“The secret things belong unto the Lord our God: but those things which are revealed belong unto us and to our children forever.” Deuteronomy 29:29. **The revelation of Himself that God has given in His word is for our study. This we may seek to understand. But beyond this we are not to penetrate.** The highest intellect may tax itself until it is wearied out in conjectures regarding the nature of God, but the effort will be fruitless. This problem has not been given us to solve. No human mind can comprehend God. None are to indulge in speculation regarding His nature. Here silence is eloquence. The Omniscient One is above discussion. {Ministry of Healing • MH 429.1}

Dr. Kellogg went beyond what was revealed to us in Scripture. Thus Mrs. White had to warn the people that he had misapplied scripture in that book. She said that we may seek to understand but we are not to go beyond what is told us. God is so far beyond us that it is a fruitless to try to conjecture into the unknown about God. It will lead us into error.

“The teaching regarding God that is presented in ‘Living Temple’ is not such as our students need. **Those who seek to define God are on forbidden ground.** We are to **enter into no controversy** regarding God, -- what He is and what He is not. He, the Omniscient One, is above discussion. **Those who express such sentiments regarding Him show that they are departing from the faith.** {Loma Linda Messages • LLM 253.1}

If we try to define what God is we are in great danger of departing from the faith. This is why we are to enter into no controversy regarding God. So, Dr. Kellogg introduced doctrine into his book that taught error on the personality and presence of God. Mrs. White called this the alpha of deadly heresies.

We are told that God and Christ are two separate persons and that Christ is the brightness and express image of His Father’s person and glory:

Our ministers must be very careful not to enter into controversy in regard to the personality of God. This is a subject that they are not to touch. It is a mystery, and the enemy will surely lead astray those who enter into it. We know that Christ came in person to reveal God to the world. **God is a person and Christ is a person.** Christ is spoken of in the Word as “the brightness of His Father’s glory, and the express image of His person.”

I was forbidden to talk with Dr. Kellogg on this subject, because it is not a subject to be talked about. And I was instructed that certain sentiments in *Living Temple* were the Alpha of a long list of deceptive theories. {Ellen G. White, Talk given on May 18 1904, Sermons and talks, Vol. 1, p. 343, Manuscript 46, 1904, ‘The Foundation of our Faith’}

She also said that this teaching would sweep away the whole Christian economy. In other words, it will sweep away all that Jesus has been doing in trying to save us from our sins.

Few can discern the result of entertaining the sophistries advocated by some at this time. But the Lord has lifted the curtain, and has shown me the result that would follow. **The spiritualistic theories regarding the personality of God, followed to their logical conclusion, sweep away the whole Christian economy.** They estimate as nothing the light that Christ came from heaven to give John to give to His people. They teach that the scenes just before us are not of sufficient importance to be given special attention. They make of no effect the truth of heavenly origin, and rob the people of God of their past experience, giving them instead a false science. {1st Selected Messages • 1SM 203.4}

If we try to change the personality of God we will change the way God saves us. For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life. John 3:16

God says He gave us His only begotten Son. He gave us His most prized possession! That speaks of a love that is hard to fully comprehend. It is deep and it was done for us that we might live! In this act, God risks losing His own Son for us. Can a Trinity god or even pantheism give us the same message of love? The Trinity god risks nothing since neither God the Father nor the “God the Son” can die. It is no wonder that Mrs. White says that the personality of God is everything to us as a people:

You are not definitely clear on **the personality of God, which is everything to us as a people.** You have virtually destroyed the Lord God Himself. {Letter 300, 1903 EGW in letter to Kellogg. Ellen G. White: The Early Elmshaven Years Volume 5 1900-1905 Page 292 Paragraph 4 (5BIO p. 292.4)}

If we destroy the Lord God Himself, our new theology changes who and what He is and does. Thus, we also change our conception of His character and that affects God’s ability to help us! The Father and His Son is a symbol of love which a Trinity cannot fulfill. Here Mrs. White speaks on the personality of God and of Jesus the Son. Determine for yourself what the symbol of love is:

The Father is all the fullness of the Godhead bodily, and is invisible to mortal sight.

The Son is all the fullness of the Godhead manifested. The Word of God declares Him to be ‘the express image of His person.’ ‘God **so loved the world**, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life.’ **Here is shown the personality of the Father.**

The Comforter that Christ promised to send after He ascended to heaven, is the Spirit in all the fullness of the Godhead, making manifest the power of divine grace to all who receive and believe in Christ as a personal Saviour.’ {Special Testimonies Series B No.7, page 62 1906 ‘Come out and be Separate’}

The word “Godhead” is used in this quote. Let’s review what this words means. In todays world, Godhead is essentially another word for “Trinity”. But in the Bible it means divine, divinity, divine nature, the state of being God. We need to be careful not to put too much meaning into a word. In this quote, Mrs. White is essentially quoting Col 2:9 then she goes on from there.

It should be evident that we must be clear on the personality of God. Because it is everything to us as a people! If He were a different type of god, the way and manner on how God saves us will be lost. In other words: the whole Christian economy will be swept away.

But, there is an associated reason why the personality of God should be everything to us as a people. How truthful is God? Is He telling us the truth that He has a Son that He dearly loves? It not only affects our being saved but it also affects our trusting Him in all things!

So yes, it affects our ability to know how much He really loves us. It also affects our knowledge of what we must become in order to be saved and it affects our ability to fully trust Him to make these changes in us as we struggle to grab on to the arm of divinity with our arm of flesh.

The Son has not only come to take our place but He has also become our example. We are to become as He was on earth. If we deny this, how would we be able to gain divine power in our own lives to overcome sin? The Trinity god with its “cheep grace” does not alert us to the reality that we must get sin out of our lives and that Christ is our example. It also creates a strange god that we cannot relate to at all, because the “son of god” part of the Trinity is really up in heaven all the time. We will talk more about these things in the last few chapters of this study.

So, What did Kellogg believe so that it was said he was departing from the faith? Because Mrs. White said his teaching would do away with the whole Christian economy.

. . . How could you so misrepresent the name you bear? You have your Bibles. Why have you not reasoned from cause to effect? You have accepted theories that have led you away from the truths that are to stamp their impress upon the characters of all Seventh-day Adventists. **Your leader [Kellogg] has been moving the foundation timbers one by one**, and his reasoning would soon leave us with **no certain foundation for our faith**. He has not heeded the testimonies that God through His Spirit has given. **The books of the Bible containing most important instruction are disregarded because they say so much about a personal God**. He has not known whither his feet were tending. But in his recent writings, **his tendencies toward pantheism have been revealed.**” {Special Testimonies Series B No. 7 • SpTB07 39.2}

With his mystical pantheistic ideas, Kellogg was departing from the faith and he was confusing others in regard to the foundation of our faith.

Your ideas are so **mystical** that they are destructive to the real substance, and the minds of some are becoming confused in regard to the **foundation of our faith**. If you allow your mind to become thus diverted, **you will give a wrong mold to the work that has made us what we are** – Seventh-day Adventists”. {Letter 52, 1903 to Kellogg}

But Kellogg found himself being attacked on all sides. He saw that his book was not going to be accepted very well and he quickly started to make changes to his views and his book.

“Ever since the council closed I have felt that I should write you confidentially regarding Dr. Kellogg’s plan for revising and republishing ‘the Living Temple’ . . . He [Kellogg] said that some days before coming to the council, he had been thinking the matter over, and began to see that **he had made a slight mistake in expressing his views** . . .

He then stated that his former views regarding the trinity had stood in his way of making a clear and absolutely correct statement; **but that within a short time he had come to believe in the trinity** and could now see pretty clearly where all the difficulty was, and believed that he could clear the matter up satisfactorily.

He told me that **he now believed in God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost**; and his view was that **it was God the Holy Ghost**, and not God the Father, **that filled all space, and every living thing**. He said if he had believed this before writing the book, he could have expressed his views without giving the wrong impression the book now gives.

I placed before him the objections I found in the teaching, and tried to show him that **the teaching was so utterly contrary to the gospel** that I did not see how it could be revised by changing a few expressions. {Letter: A. G. Daniells to W. C. White Oct. 29, 1903 p. 1-2.}

Kellogg was going to revise his book and he thinks by teaching the trinity doctrine that all the problems will be answered. But Mrs White said there has not been a change and that there should be no union until there is a change.

It will be said that Living Temple has been revised. **But the Lord has shown me that the writer has not changed**, and that **there can be no unity between him and the ministers of the gospel while he continues to cherish his present sentiments**. I am bidden to lift my voice in warning to our people, saying, “Be not deceived; **God is not mocked**“ (Galatians 6:7). {1SM 199.3}

You have had access to Testimonies for the Church, volumes 7 and 8. In these Testimonies the danger signal is raised. But the light so clear and plain to minds that have not been influenced by deceptive theories, has not been discerned by some. While the misleading theories of this book are entertained by our physicians, there cannot be union between them and the ministers who are bearing the gospel message. **There should be no union until there is a change**. {1st Selected Messages • 1SM 199.4 written in August 7, 1904}

By adopting the Trinity we find that there really is no change in Dr. Kellogg’s message. He was not clear on the personality of God. We must always remind ourselves that this truth that we have is everything to us as a people and when we do away with the truth about God we will virtually destroy the Lord God Himself.

You are not definitely clear on **the personality of God, which is everything to us as a people**. You have virtually destroyed the Lord God Himself. {Letter 300, 1903 EGW in letter to Kellogg. Ellen G. White: The Early Elmshaven Years Volume 5 1900-1905 Page 292 Paragraph 4 (5BIO p. 292.4)}

Here is a very interesting comment made by Dr. Kellogg. He asks the question: Is the Holy Ghost a person? Then he goes on to say that Mrs. White, in so many words, says that the Holy Ghost is actually the third person of the Godhead. Let’s look at it:

As far as I can fathom, the difficulty which is found in ‘The Living Temple’, the whole thing may be simmered down to the question: **Is the Holy Ghost a person? You say no**. I had supposed the Bible said this for the reason that the personal pronoun ‘he’ is used in speaking of the Holy Ghost.

Sister White uses the pronoun ‘he’ and has said in so many words that the Holy Ghost is the third person of the Godhead. How the Holy Ghost can be the third person and not be a person at all is difficult for me to see. {Letter: J. H. Kellogg to G. I. Butler Oct. 28, 1903}

Now, when he says that Mrs. White says the Holy Ghost is the third person of the Godhead, Dr. Kellogg is thinking Trinity. Also, we must remember that this is also what theologians today in the Adventist church are saying concerning Mrs. White. They say that she says that the Holy Spirit is the third person of the Godhead. So the theologians of today use these very same kind of statements to push the idea that Mrs. White believed in the Trinity.

Well, let’s see what Mrs. White says about Kellogg’s statement:

. . . From the light given me by the Lord, I knew that some of the sentiments advocated in the book did not bear the endorsement of God, and that they were a snare that the enemy had prepared for the last days. I thought that this would surely be discerned, and that it would not be necessary for me to say anything about it. {1SM 202.3}

In the controversy that arose among our brethren regarding the teachings of this book, those in favor of giving it a wide circulation declared: **“It contains the very sentiments that Sister White has been teaching.”** This assertion struck right to my heart. I felt heartbroken; **for I knew that this representation of the matter was not true**. {1st Selected Messages • 1SM 203.1}

Initially, Mrs. White didn’t think she would have to say much because she thought that God’s people would

easily see the truth and know that the book was really an attack on our message. However when people started saying that this book actually had the very sentiments that Sister White teaches, She felt heartbroken. It is obvious that She did not understand that the book agreed with what she had taught.

I am compelled to speak in denial of the claim that the teachings of Living Temple can be sustained by statements from my writings. There may be in this book expressions and sentiments that are in harmony with my writings. And there may be in my writings many statements which, **taken from their connection, and interpreted according to the mind of the writer of Living Temple,** would seem to be in harmony with the teachings of this book. This may give apparent support to the assertion that the sentiments in Living Temple are in harmony with my writings. **But God forbid that this sentiment should prevail.** {1SM 203.3 published 1904}

Mrs. White felt compelled to speak out to deny that the teachings in Living Temple were the same as in her writings. We remember that Dr. Kellogg mentioned that Mrs. White says the Holy Ghost is the third person of the Godhead which he understood to be a third person of the Trinity. He then argued: “How the Holy Ghost can be the third person and not be a person at all is difficult for me to see.”

But here Mrs. White said that there may be expressions and sentiments that were taken out of context and thus interpreted according to what Dr. Kellogg believes. But she said that this is only an apparent agreement with her writings but that God forbid that this idea should prevail.

Sister White uses the pronoun ‘he’ and has said in so many words that the Holy Ghost is the third person of the Godhead.

Mrs. White warned not to enter into controversy over this subject yet that is exactly what happened. People entered to support the wide circulation of the book. Apparently the omega apostasy will be so big and successful that Mrs. White trembled for our people! Many will depart from the faith!

“Be not deceived; **many will depart from the faith,** giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils. We have now before us **the alpha of this danger. The omega will be of a most startling nature.**” {Ellen G. White, *Special Testimonies Series B, No. 2 page 16, ‘A Letter to Leading Physicians’, July 24th 1904, ‘Teach the Word’*}

The omega will be of such a startling nature that many will depart from the faith giving heed to seducing spirits and the doctrines of devils. When she says they will leave the faith, she means they will leave the truth, the message of the Bible, and the pillars of our faith! Leaving the message is the same thing as departing from the faith. It is what we believe.

There are some things upon which we must reason, and there are other things that we must not discuss. In regard to God -- what He is and where He is -- silence is eloquence. When you are tempted to speak of what God is, keep silence, because as surely as you begin to speak of this, you will disparage Him. {Ellen G. White, Talk given on May 18 10-4, Sermons and talks, Vol. 1, p. 343, Manuscript 46, 1904, ‘The Foundation of our Faith’}

Satan has a personal Gripe Against Jesus

Initially, Lucifer was perfect and righteous. but for some reason he began to indulge in self-exaltation. Satan has a personal gripe against Jesus since the time he was thrown out of heaven.

Little by little Lucifer came to indulge the desire for self-exaltation. . . . Not content with his position,

though honored above the heavenly host, he ventured to covet homage due alone to the Creator. . . . And coveting the glory with which the infinite Father had invested His Son, this prince of angels aspired to power that was the prerogative of Christ alone. {PP 35.2}

The King of the universe summoned the heavenly hosts before Him, that in their presence **He might set forth the true position of His Son** and show the relation He sustained to all created beings. **The Son of God shared the Father's throne, and the glory of the eternal, self-existent One encircled both.** . . . Before the assembled inhabitants of heaven the King declared that none but Christ, the Only Begotten of God, could fully enter into His purposes, and to Him it was committed to execute the mighty counsels of His will. The Son of God had wrought the Father's will in the creation of all the hosts of heaven; and to Him, as well as to God, their homage and allegiance were due. . . . {PP 36.2}

. . . the Son of God was exalted above him, as one in power and authority with the Father. He shared the Father's counsels, while Lucifer did not thus enter into the purposes of God. **"Why," questioned this mighty angel, "should Christ have the supremacy? Why is He honored above Lucifer?"** {PP 36.3}

So, sin started in heaven and it was over Jesus and His divinity. Why was He honored above Lucifer? The Father then and there set forth the true position of His Son before all of heaven so that none should stumble over the issue. But Satan would not let go of it in his mind.

Angels were expelled from heaven because they would not work in harmony with God. They fell from their high estate because they wanted to be exalted. They had come to exalt themselves, and they forgot that **their beauty of person and of character came from the Lord Jesus. This fact the [fallen] angels would obscure, that Christ was the only begotten Son of God,** and they came to consider that they were not to consult Christ. One angel began the controversy and carried it on until there was rebellion in the heavenly courts, among the angels. {*This Day With God*, p. 128 (1910) }

Satan wanted the honor that the Son of God had. But instead he was cast out of heaven. Thus, Satan and his evil angels have tried to obscure the fact that Jesus really is the only begotten Son of God.

As Satan had led man to sin, he had hoped that God's abhorrence of sin would forever separate him from man, and break the connecting link between Heaven and earth. But the opening heavens in connection with the voice of God addressing his Son was like a death-knell to Satan. He feared that God was now to unite man more fully to himself, and give him power to overcome his devices. And for this purpose, Christ had come from the royal courts to the earth. **Satan was well acquainted with the position of honor Christ had held in Heaven as the Son of God, the beloved of the Father. And that he should leave Heaven and come to this world as a man filled him with apprehension for his own safety. He could not comprehend the mystery of this great sacrifice for the benefit of fallen man.** He knew well the value of Heaven far exceeded the anticipation and appreciation of fallen man. The most costly treasures of the world he knew would not compare with its worth. As he had lost through his rebellion all the riches and pure glories of Heaven, **he was determined to be revenged** by causing as many he could to undervalue Heaven and to place their affections upon earthly treasures. {RH, March 3, 1874 par. 21}

Satan is now desperate and revengeful and so he is doing everything he can to ensure that man will not see the love of God Satan does not want man to appreciate the great sacrifice that was done for their benefit.

"Satan is determined that men shall not see the love of God which led Him to give His only-begotten Son to save a lost race; for it is the goodness of God that leads men to repentance". {Selected Messages, book 1, p. 156. (Manuscript 154, 1897) }

Because of God's gift of His Son to us, the Son of His bosom, His love for us and the goodness of God "really sticks out". This is what leads men to repentance, the love of God.

We have been Warned that Satan would try to get the Adventist church to give up the Pillars of our Faith!

Satan is working from the top down and he is working behind the scenes to change the pillars of our faith. Thus, there has been a movement within the SDA church for some time that has wanted to change the pillar doctrines of our faith:

“Satan is working with men in prominent positions to sweep away the foundations of our faith.” {Review and Herald, Nov. 12, 1903) }

To sweep away the foundation of our faith is a dramatic change. In order to convince people that this change is good the leaders will even say that Mrs. White even believed in it as well:

“They will bring in all conceivable fallacies, and will present them as coming from Mrs. White, that they may beguile souls” {Letter 73, 1903, Selected Messages, bk. 1, pp. 41}

Of course, Mrs. White is said to have changed her position when she wrote the Desire of Ages. Thus today’s church uses Mrs. White to beguile people in believing the change that leads us away from important truths.

“Never, never seek to remove one landmark that the Lord has given His people. The truth stands firmly established on the eternal Rock – a foundation that storm and tempest can never move.” {8 Testimonies p162}

Thus we are warned never to remove even one landmark from the truths that God has given us.

What will the Omega Apostasy Attack?

As we already have seen, the foundations of our faith, the truth that we have which has made us what we are have stood the test of trial since it was tried as by fire:

Let not any man enter upon the work of tearing down the **foundations of the truth that have made us what we are**. God has led His people forward step by step though there were pitfalls of error on every side. Under the wonderful guidance of a plain, “Thus saith the Lord,” a truth has been established that **has stood the test of trial**. When men arise and attempt to draw away disciples after them, meet them with the truths that have been **tried as by fire.**”

Those who seek to remove the old landmarks are not holding fast; they are not remembering how they have received and heard. Those who try to bring in theories that would remove the pillars of our faith concerning **the sanctuary** or **concerning the personality of God or of Christ**, are working as blind men. They are seeking to bring in uncertainties and to **set the people of God adrift without an anchor**. *Ellen G. White to the delegates at the 1905 General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists, Takoma Park, Washington D. C., May 24th 1905, "A Warning against False Theories," {Manuscript Release No. 760. p. 9 (1905) }*

These two areas are of special concern, the sanctuary service and the personality of God and Christ are old landmarks of our faith. They will especially be attacked in the omega apostasy.

I entreat every one to be clear and firm regarding the certain truths that we have heard and received and advocated. The statements of God’s Word are plain. Plant your feet firmly on the platform of eternal truth.

Reject every phase of error, even through it be covered with a semblance of reality, **which denies the personality of God and of Christ**. {Review and Herald, August 31, 1905 par. 11}

The personality of God and Christ were also attacked in the Alpha apostasy but apparently Mrs. White saw that it will also be especially attacked again. Today, we can see that this has already happened.

As a people, **we are to stand firm on the platform of eternal truth** that has withstood test and trial. We are to hold to **the sure pillars of our faith**. The principles of truth **that God has revealed to us are our only true foundation**. **They have made us what we are**. The lapse of time has not lessened their value. **It is the constant effort of the enemy to remove these truths** from their setting, and to put in their place spurious theories. He will bring in everything that he possibly can to carry out his deceptive designs. {Series B, No. 2 p 51 2nd paragraph Also Selected Messages book 1 p 201 paragraph 2}

It is the constant effort of the enemy to remove the platform of eternal truth, that God has revealed to us, and because most Adventists have become ignorant of a sufficient Bible background, the attack has proved effective.

The Omega. The Time for the Last Great Apostasy has Arrived

We can see that the time of this great apostasy has arrived. In the world, everything seems to be going crazy. Yet in the church, we see that peace and safety is a major theme, because there is no longer a need to warn the world of a coming judgement. To warn of the Beast power, through the three angel's messages, is no longer tolerated. Thus we see that we have departed from the faith and are actually giving heed to seducing spirits.

The end of all things is near at hand. The signs are rapidly fulfilling, yet it would seem that but few realize that the day of the Lord is coming, swiftly, silently, as a thief in the night. Many are saying, "Peace and safety." Unless they are watching and waiting for their Lord, they will be taken as in a snare. . . . "Now the spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils" (1 Timothy 4:1). The time of this apostasy is here. **Every conceivable effort will be made to throw doubt upon the positions that we have occupied for over half a century. . .** {3SM 408.3}

Every conceivable effort will be made to throw doubt on the platform of truth that we have had from the beginning. This is so a great deception can be played on the people of God.

Let none seek to tear away the foundations of our faith,--the foundations that were laid at the beginning of our work, by prayerful study of the Word **and by revelation**. Upon these foundations we have been building for the last fifty years. **Men may suppose that they have found a new way, and that they can lay a stronger foundation than that which has been laid. But this is a great deception. Other foundation can no man lay than that which has been laid.** {RH, March 3, 1904 par. 13}

A powerful deception, that the new doctrines are a stronger foundation than the original foundation of our faith, has taken hold of the church. But we have been warned from the beginning that we are to allow no one to tear away the original foundations of our faith which God gave us.

Now at the present time God designs a new and fresh impetus shall be given to His work. **Satan sees this, and he is determined it shall be hindered. He knows that if he can deceive the people who claim to believe present truth, [and make them believe that the work the Lord designs to do for His people is a removing of the old landmarks, something which they should, with most determined zeal, resist, then he exults over the deception he has led them to believe.** The work for this time has certainly been a surprising work of various hindrances, owing to the false setting of matters before the minds of many of our people. That which is food to the churches is regarded as dangerous, and should not be given them. And this slight difference of ideas is allowed to unsettle the faith, to cause apostasy, to break up unity, to sow discord, all because they do not know what they are striving about themselves. Brethren, is it not best to be sensible? Heaven is looking upon us all, and what can they think of recent developments? While in this condition of things, building up barriers, we

not only deprive ourselves of great light and precious advantages, but just now, when we so much need it, we place ourselves where light cannot be communicated from heaven that we ought to communicate to others.-- Manuscript 13, 1889. {CW 31.1}

We must remind ourselves that every conceivable effort will be made to destroy the old landmarks of our faith. Satan promotes the lie that God is leading us on, closer to the truth of the Bible. But we are to resist this with a most determined zeal. The New Theology is a deception and Satan exults over how he is able to deceive God's people to destroy them.

“Satan’s snares are laid for us as verily as they were laid for the children of Israel just prior to their entrance into the land of Canaan. We are repeating the history of that people.” {5T 160}

Just prior to entering into the land of Canaan, they went into apostasy. What does this say concerning us? As we approach the last days, as we approach the time when the three angels messages are to sound, we might find ourselves fully deceived in error; Right at the entrance of the land of our heavenly Canaan.

“Again and again I have been shown that the past experiences of God’s people are not to be counted as dead facts. We are not to treat the record of these experiences as we would treat a last year’s almanac. The record is to be kept in mind, for history will repeat itself” {Ellen G. White, letter 238, 1903.}

The Adventist church was actually formed by God to help warn the peoples of the world. However, Satan has been successful in taking away from God's people the very message that they are to give. We must not regard the history of the Israelites entrance into the land of Canaan as dead facts. This story, so long ago, has a direct connection to us because Satan wishes to snare us just as he snared the Israelites.

We know that history is going to be repeated, that just when the time of trouble is just about to start and the soon trip to heaven commences, we will also enter into apostasy. But we must not allow this to happen to you or me. We must warn as many as possible of this danger.

In this Omega Apostasy What is Going to Happen?

Satan is going to try to cause God's work to be undermined. Now, in today's world, people within the leadership of our church have already caused the loss of many of the pillars of our faith. Obviously, if completely successful, this would keep the work of God from moving forward. But Mrs. White asks us: “Shall we allow this to be done, brethren?”

Satan has laid his plans to undermine our faith in the history of the cause and work of God. I am deeply in earnest as I write this: Satan is working with men in prominent positions to sweep away the foundations of our faith. Shall we allow this to be done, brethren?”{RH, Nov. 12, 1903 par. 13}

Men in prominent positions within our church will sweep away the foundations of our faith. Thus it will be an inside job and it will also be done in an underhanded and powerful way because they want to tear down our foundations.

What influence is it would lead men at this stage of our history to work in an underhand, powerful way to tear down the foundation of our faith--the foundation that was laid at the beginning of our work by prayerful study of the Word and by revelation? Upon this foundation we have been building for the past fifty years. Do you wonder that when I see the beginning of a work that would remove some of the pillars of our faith, I have something to say? I must obey the command, “Meet it!” . . . {1SM 207.3}

She said that men will work in an underhanded and powerful way to tear down the foundation of our faith. Because of Mrs. White's resistance to the destruction of our pillars, they had to wait until she died before they could begin. So, the major change happened after Mrs. White died:

When waking out of sleep, she [Mrs. White] called the nurse to her side and said. "I want to tell you. I hate sin (repeated three times).

I am charged to tell our people that some do not realize that the devil has device after device and he carries these out in ways that they do not expect. Satan's agencies will invent ways to make sinners out of saints. I tell you now, that **when I am laid to rest, great changes will take place**. I do not know when I shall be taken; but **I desire to warn all against the devices of the devil**.

I want the people to know **that I warned them fully before my death**. I do not know especially what changes will take place, **but Satan's devices will be brought before the people**. But they should watch every conceivable sin that Satan will try to immortalize. {*Elmshaven W. C. White reporting Ellen White's words, letter, 24th February 1915*} {Manuscript 1, 1915}

On her death bed Mrs. White told what was to happen after she dies. Willy White recorded what she said. She wanted to tell God's people that Satan would make his move right after she died. Men working in prominent positions within the church would start to try to sweep away the foundations of our faith by first attacking the truth about God the Father and His Son. Thus, they chose to deceive the people in very direct ways. This action fulfilled her words: "Satan's devices will be brought before the people"! As we saw in the introduction of this paper, a major first-step occurred in the secretive 1919 Bible conference.

Great things shall come to pass after I am gone; Satan will work as never before. All that can be shaken will be shaken out. We must draw near to God, for **we cannot lean upon man or the crowd. We must know the Lord deeply as never before**. {*Asiatic Division News, May 1-15, 1915, p. 43; quoted from The Alpha and the Omega of Apostasy by Julius Gilbert White*}

This is another similar kind of quote from a source further from the White Estates. Some think it is a different rendition of the same quote as the Manuscript 1, 1915. However, it could be a different quote or a different part of the same message recorded by W. C. White.

Because of the apostasy, we can no longer depend upon our fellow members of the church or even our pastor to help us understand the issues of this apostasy. "**We cannot lean upon man or the crowd.**" But we must know the Lord deeply as never before, and we must know the Bible and the Spirit of Prophecy for ourselves.

This next quote is the one where Mrs. White really tells what will happen in the Omega Apostasy!

The enemy of souls has sought to bring in the supposition that **a great reformation** was to take place among Seventh-day Adventists, and that this reformation would consist in **giving up the doctrines which stand as the pillars of our faith**, and engaging in a process of reorganization. Were this reformation to take place, what would result? **The principles of truth that God in His wisdom has given to the remnant church, would be discarded. Our religion would be changed.** The fundamental principles that have sustained the work for the last fifty years would be accounted as error. A new organization would be established. **Books of a new order would be written**". "**A system of intellectual philosophy would be introduced.** The founders of this system would go into the cities, and do a wonderful work. The Sabbath of course, would be lightly regarded, as also the God who created it. Nothing would be allowed to stand in the way of the new movement. **The leaders would teach that virtue is better than vice, but God being removed**, they would place their dependence on human power, which, without God, is worthless. Their foundation would be built on the sand, and storm and tempest would sweep away the structure.

Who has authority to begin such a movement? We have our Bibles. We have our experience, attested to by the miraculous working of the Holy Spirit. We have a truth that admits of no compromise. Shall we not repudiate everything that is not in harmony with this truth? {Selected Messages, book 1, 204, 205. Series B, No. 2 p 54, 55}

Below are the points she made but in a list format. Go over these points and make sure I didn't miss any point she made. Most or all of these points have already happened in the church.

A great false reformation will take place among Seventh-day Adventists, the following things will happen.

1. The church will give up the doctrines which have been the pillars of our faith
2. The principles of truth that God in His wisdom has given to the remnant church would be discarded. Thus our religion would be changed. These are the principles that have sustained our work for the first fifty years . . . discarded.
3. The original truth will be spoken of as being in error.
4. The church will be reorganized. (Today the rules and bylaws are unrecognizable from before.)
5. A system of intellectual philosophy would be introduced.
6. Books of a new order would be written. These books now would have the new theology rather than truth.
7. Nothing would be allowed to stand in the way of this new movement.
8. The Sabbath would be lightly regarded as well as the God who created it
9. The leaders would teach that virtue is better than vice, but God being removed.
10. They will depend upon human power.
11. This whole movement will be built on the sand. The Storm and tempest of the last days, the time of trouble, will sweep this structure away.

This next quote shows that this great apostasy will develop and increase as we approach the end. It will become stronger and stronger until the very end.

One thing it is certain is soon to be realized, **the great apostasy, which is developing and increasing and waxing stronger, and will continue to do so until the Lord shall descend from heaven with a shout. We are to hold fast the first principles of our denominating faith, and go forward from strength to increased faith. Ever we are to keep the faith that has been substantiated by the Holy Spirit of God from the earlier events of our experience until the present time.** We need now larger breadth, and deeper, more earnest, unwavering faith in the leadings of the Holy Spirit. If we needed the manifest proof of the Holy Spirit's power to confirm truth in the beginning, after the passing of the time, we need to-day all the evidence in the confirmation of the truth, when souls are departing from the faith and giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils. There must not be any languishing of soul now {Series B, No. 7, p. 57.1}

If ever there was a period of time when we needed the Holy Spirit's power in our discourses, in our prayers, in every action proposed, it is now. We are not to stop at the first experience, but while we bear the same message to the people, this message is to be strengthened and enlarged. We are to see and realize the importance of the message, made certain by its divine origin. We are to follow on to know the Lord, that we may know that His going forth is prepared as the morning. {SpTB07 57.2}

Our souls need the quickening from the Source of all power. We may be strengthened and confirmed in the past experience that holds us to the essential points of truth which have made us what we are,-- Seventh -day Adventists. {SpTB07 57.3}

The past fifty years have not dimmed one jot or principle of our faith as we received the great and wonderful evidences that were made certain to us in 1844, after the passing of the time. The languishing souls are to be confirmed and quickened according to His word. And many of the ministers of the gospel and the Lord's physicians will have their languishing souls quickened according to the word. Not a word is changed or denied. That which the Holy Spirit testified to as truth after the passing of the time, in our great disappointment, is the solid foundation of truth. Pillars of truth were revealed, and we accepted the foundation principles that have

made us what we are--Seventh-day Adventists, keeping the commandments of God and having the faith of Jesus. {Special Testimonies Series B, No. 7 • SpTB07 58.1}

This apostasy will get stronger and stronger as we approach the end. In spite of the fact that the church will get bold and even more bold in its apostasy, we are not to be led by them. But rather we must hold on to what God has given us as truth and to do the work that God has planned for us to do!

Soon every possible effort will be made to discount and pervert the truth of the testimonies of God's Spirit. We must have in readiness the clear, straight messages **that since 1846** have been coming to God's people.

There will be those once united with us in the faith who will search for new, strange doctrines, for something odd and sensational to present to the people. **They will bring in all conceivable fallacies, and will present them as coming from Mrs. White, that they may beguile souls...**

Those who have treated the light that the Lord has given as a common thing will not be benefited by the instruction presented.

There are those who will misinterpret the messages that God has given, in accordance with their spiritual blindness.

Some will yield their faith, and will deny the truth of the messages, pointing to them as falsehoods. Some will hold them up to ridicule, working against the light that God has been giving for years, and some who are weak in the faith will thus be led astray.

But others will be greatly helped by the messages. Though not personally addressed, they will be corrected, and will be led to shun the evils specified.... The Spirit of the Lord will be in the instruction, and doubts existing in many minds will be swept away. **The testimonies themselves will be the key that will explain the messages given, as scripture is explained by scripture. Many will read with eagerness the messages reproving wrong, that they may learn what they may do to be saved. . . . Light will dawn upon the understanding, and the Spirit will make an impression on minds, as Bible truth is clearly and simply presented in the messages that since 1846 God has been sending His people.** These messages are to find their place in hearts, **and transformations will take place.** {Letter 73, 1903, 1 *Selected Messages*, pp. 41, 42}

The truth that was given through the testimonies will be discounted while it will be said that Mrs. White actually taught their new doctrines. Thus many will yield their faith and deny the truth. Then they will start to ridicule those who are holding on to the original truth God gave us.

What to Do About This Problem?

In 1905, Mrs. White said that wrong sentiments were already coming into the church. So, how are we to meet this problem?

And truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ. All through the Scriptures, the Father and the Son are spoken of as two distinct personages. **You will hear men endeavoring to make the Son of God a nonentity.** He and the Father are one, but they are two personages. **Wrong sentiments regarding this are coming in, and we shall all have to meet them.** {Review and Herald, July 13, 1905 par. 3}

People will try to make the Son of God a nonentity. In other words, they will say that Jesus is not really a separate person but rather He is said to be part of the Trinity. Thus they are saying that He is not really the Son of God.

He who denies the personality of God and of his Son Jesus Christ, is denying God and Christ. "If that which ye have heard from the beginning shall remain in you, ye also shall continue in the Son, and in the

Father.” **If you continue to believe and obey the truths you first embraced regarding the personality of the Father and the Son, you will be joined together with him in love.** {Review and Herald, March 8 1906 par 19}

We are to search the Scriptures as never before because the arguments against the truth will turn you upside down if you don't have a clear idea of what the truth actually is and we must know how Scripture and the Spirit of Prophecy really teach it.

Let every one who claims to believe that the Lord is soon coming, **search the Scriptures as never before;** for Satan is determined to try every device possible to keep souls in darkness, and blind the mind to the perils of the times in which we are living. **Let every believer take up his Bible with earnest prayer, that he may be enlightened by the holy Spirit as to what is truth,** that he may know more of God and of Jesus Christ whom he has sent. Search for the truth as for hidden treasures, and disappoint the enemy. **The time of test is just upon us, for the loud cry of the third angel has already begun in the revelation of the righteousness of Christ, the sin-pardoning Redeemer. This is the beginning of the light of the angel whose glory shall fill the whole earth.** {*The Review and Herald*, November 22, 1892}

We need to know how truth is taught in the Bible and the Spirit of Prophecy because the test is coming. If we want to be on the right side, if we want to be one of the ones who will be filled with the glory of truth that angel will impart; we must search the truth as for hidden treasure. Thus the enemy will be disappointed.

In the balances of the sanctuary the Seventh-day Adventist church is to be weighed. **She will be judged by the privileges and advantages that she has had.** If her spiritual experience does not correspond to the advantages that Christ, at infinite cost, has bestowed on her, **if the blessings conferred have not qualified her to do the work entrusted to her, on her will be pronounced the sentence: “Found wanting.”** By the light bestowed, the opportunities given, will she be judged. {*Testimonies for the Church*, vol. 8, 247, 1903 – Written just after the 1903 General Conference Session}

We are to be judged by the privileges and advantages that we have had. We need to approach our sin-pardoning Redeemer that the light of the angel that fills the whole earth will fill us as well. At infinite cost to Himself, Christ has given us His gift of eternal life. We must make sure that we approach our Savior often so that we can be qualified to do our work that God has us to do. We must not be found wanting! So, we must pray much in these last days for the rays of light we need.

Satan will bring his temptations, **and if he is to be resisted we must pray to God for deliverance. If there ever was a time that we needed to pray, it is in these last days.** The Word is no more bound than it was when Christ was upon the earth. We shall have Satan and evil men to combat, **but we also shall have messengers of light to help us. It is for us to gather upon our pathway all the rays of light, and not listen to error, for if we do we shall be turned away from truth.** We have no time to listen to fables. Christ's prayer was, “Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth” (John 17:17). We want the truth and we want to give Him all our powers, that when He comes His benediction will rest upon every one of us and we shall receive the reward. {3MR 98.3}

We will have to seek true sanctification through learning from God's word and through prayer. We must make this our most important aim in life; Because various leaders are trying to change the doctrines so we can be like the other churches. We must protect ourselves from the darkness that is invading into the church.

Men will employ every means to make less prominent the difference between Seventh-day Adventists and observers of the first day of the week. A company was presented before me under the name of Seventh-day Adventists, who were advising that the banner, or sign, which makes us a distinct people should not be held

out so strikingly; for they claimed that this was not the best policy in order to secure success to our institutions. But this is not a time to haul down our colors, to be ashamed of our faith. **This distinctive banner, described in the words, “Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus,” is to be borne through the world to the close of probation.** While efforts should be increased to advance in different localities, there must be no cloaking of our faith to secure patronage. Truth must come to souls ready to perish; and if it is in any way hidden, God is dishonored, and the blood of souls will be upon our garments. {*Testimonies for the Church*, vol. 6 - 6T 144.1}

Just as long as those in connection with our institutions walk humbly with God, heavenly intelligences will co-operate with them; but let all bear in mind the fact that God has said: “Them that honor Me I will honor.” 1 Samuel 2:30. Never for one moment should the impression be given to anyone that it would be for his profit to hide his faith and doctrines from the unbelieving people of the world, fearing that he may not be so highly esteemed if his principles are known. Christ requires from all His followers open, manly confession of faith. Each must take his position and be what God designed he should be, a spectacle to the world, to angels, and to men. The whole universe is looking with inexpressible interest to see the closing work of the great controversy between Christ and Satan. Every Christian is to be a light, not hid under a bushel or under a bed, but put on a candlestick, that light may be given to all who are in the house. Never, from cowardice or worldly policy, let the truth of God be placed in the background. {*Testimonies for the Church*, vol. 6 - 6T 144.2}

We can see that Adventists are almost like the people of other churches. The distinctive nature of God’s people is missing in the church. But God’s true people will patiently wait on God and they will keep the commandments of God and they will have the faith of Jesus. This is a banner that is to be heralded to the world till the close of probation.

The things you have described as taking place in Indiana, [THESE COMMENTS WERE MADE IN CONNECTION WITH THE “HOLY FLESH” MOVEMENT] **the Lord has shown me would take place just before the close of probation. Every uncouth thing will be demonstrated. There will be shouting, with drums, music, and dancing.** The senses of rational beings will become so confused that they cannot be trusted to make right decisions. . . . {*Last Day Events*, p. 159}

Since the distinctive message has been lost, the church will try all sorts of things to try to keep the youth and other members in the church. Thus there will be shouting with drums, wild music and dancing right in the church! This, of course is already happening. But I believe it will get worse.

No longer consent to listen without protest to the perversion of truth. Unmask the pretentious sophistries which, if received, will lead ministers and physicians and medical missionary workers to ignore the truth...

I have been instructed to warn our people; **for many are in danger of receiving theories and sophistries that undermine the foundation pillars of the faith....** I call upon those who have been connected with these binding influences **to break the yoke to which they have long submitted, and stand as free men in Christ. Nothing but a determined effort will break the spell that is upon them.**

Be not deceived, many will depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils. We have now before us the alpha of this danger. The omega will be of a most startling nature.” {1 Selected Messages p. 196 - 197}

We are no longer to passively listen to the error that is being brought into the church because many will depart from the faith giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils. It is truth, the new doctrines have literally swept through our church and it seems that virtually all believe in it.

As the Omega Apostasy Becomes more Desperate

When the leaders become determined to teach darkness rather than light in this Omega Apostasy, it might be that we will have to avoid them. This first quote from Early Writings, gave instruction to the early Seventh-day Adventists concerning what they needed to do at that time. One thing that Mrs. White has been consistent on from the beginning is that we are to remain distinct from all other groups that teach error. We have been given these truths and we must hold on to this truth.

The different parties of professed Advent believers have each a little truth, but God has given all these truths to His children who are being prepared for the day of God. He has also given them truths that none of these parties know, neither will they understand. **Things which are sealed up to them, the Lord has opened to those who will see and are ready to understand. If God has any new light to communicate, He will let His chosen and beloved understand it, without their going to have their minds enlightened by hearing those who are in darkness and error.** {EW 124.2}

I was shown the necessity of those who believe that we are having the last message of mercy, being separate from those who are daily imbibing new errors. I saw that neither young nor old should attend their meetings; for it is wrong to thus encourage them while they teach error that is a deadly poison to the soul and teach for doctrines the commandments of men. The influence of such gatherings is not good. If God has delivered us from such darkness and error, we should stand fast in the liberty wherewith He has set us free and rejoice in the truth. **God is displeased with us when we go to listen to error, without being obliged to go; for unless He sends us to those meetings where error is forced home to the people by the power of the will, He will not keep us. The angels cease their watchful care over us, and we are left to the buffetings of the enemy, to be darkened and weakened by him and the power of his evil angels; and the light around us becomes contaminated with the darkness.** {EW 124.3}

I saw that we have no time to throw away in listening to fables. Our minds should not be thus diverted, but should be occupied with the present truth, and seeking wisdom that we may obtain a more thorough knowledge of our position, that with meekness we may be able to give a reason of our hope from the Scriptures. While false doctrines and dangerous errors are pressed upon the mind, it cannot be dwelling upon the truth which is to fit and prepare the house of Israel to stand in the day of the Lord. {EW 125.1}

We were told that our church will leave the message that God has given us and that pastors will teach false doctrines. These ministers are unsanctified and are working against God.

Unsanctified ministers are arraying themselves against God. They are praising Christ and the god of this world in the same breath. While professedly they receive Christ, they embrace Barabbas, and by their actions say, "Not this Man, but Barabbas." Let all who read these lines, take heed. Satan has made his boast of what he can do. He thinks to dissolve the unity which Christ prayed might exist in His church. He says, "I will go forth and be a lying spirit to deceive those that I can, to criticize, and condemn, and falsify." Let the son of deceit and false witness be entertained by a church that has had great light, great evidence, **and that church will discard the message the Lord has sent, and receive the most unreasonable assertions and false suppositions and false theories. Satan laughs at their folly, for he knows what truth is.** {TM 409.2}

Many will stand in our pulpits with the torch of false prophecy in their hands, kindled from the hellish torch of Satan. If doubts and unbelief are cherished, the faithful ministers will be removed from the people who think they know so much. "If thou hadst known," said Christ, "even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong unto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes." {TM 409.3}

We must try to protect the next generation by placing them where they will have as little contact with these dark teachings as possible.

Now, those who have had years in this same experience, know not God nor Jesus Christ whom He has sent,

and should such go forth as representatives of Jesus Christ? **These men will never give the right mold to other minds**; they have not grown up to the full stature of men and women in Christ. They simply have the name of Christians but are not fitted for the work of God, and never will be until they are born again, and learn the A.B.C. in true religion of Jesus Christ. There is a little hope in one direction: **Take the young men and women, and place them where they will come as little in contact with our churches as possible, that the low grade of piety which is current in this day shall not leaven their ideas of what it means to be a Christian.** {12MR 333.1}

The platform of truth, the pillars of our church that God gave us must be held unto. Satan will do anything possible to wrench these teachings from us that would save us in the end.

I am filled with sorrow because statements made under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, and **designed by God to be a great blessing to His people, to guard them against the seducing sentiments of Satan, are woven in with spiritualistic views, and are thus made to testify to falsehoods of Satan's own creating.** How can I say to our people, Harmonize with those who advocate these wrong sentiments? **How can I hold my peace, and say, Unify?** God gives me the message, Beware of the leaven of those who have been destroying the faith of Seventh-day Adventists. There are those to whom I fear to write personally. God says, **Beware of the leaven of those who have stepped off the platform of truth. Those who use my writings, given me by God, to build themselves up in sophistry and deceptive theories, steal that which was given to establish souls in the sanctification of the truth, and use it to testify to theories against which I am bidden to warn our people. Beware of the leaven that some who have lost their connection with God will introduce, declaring their theories to be in harmony with that which Sister White has written.** {10MR 48.1}

We must not lose our connection with God, thus we must have no fellowship with these unfruitful workers of darkness. In addition we should be reproving them of their errors.

And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them. Ephesians 5:11

All these warnings present quite a test for us. In today's world, we are surrounded with error and darkness, especially in the church! But we must always remember the help which is ever at the door waiting to come in and guide us. Don't forget the Sanctuary message and use it. We are to come to Christ before it is too late. Learn how to struggle and agonize with God.

This is a Test for God's People

What Satan has been trying to take away from God's people is a testing message that we are to bear to the world. We are to be a distinct and separate people from the world because we have the truth.

The Lord has been pleased to give His people the third angel's message as a testing message to bear to the world. **John beholds a people distinct and separate from the world**, who refuse to worship the beast or his image, who bear God's sign, keeping holy His Sabbath--**the seventh-day to be kept holy as a memorial of the living God, the Creator of heaven and earth.** Of them the apostle writes, "Here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus."-- Letter 98, 1900. {Evangelism - Ev 233.3}

This test is all inclusive. If we want to keep our sights on the prize of eternal life that Jesus wishes to give us, we must be among those who keep the commandments of God and also with the faith of Jesus:

12 Here is the **patience of the saints**: here are they that **keep the commandments of God**, and the **faith of Jesus**. Revelation 14:12

The saints keep all the commandments of God and they have the faith of Jesus.

17 And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which **keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.** Revelation 12:17

Is the faith of Jesus and the testimony of Jesus some how related? If we are God's people, we will have all the testimony of Jesus in our hearts. We will follow every word.

10 And I fell at his feet to worship him. And he said unto me, See thou do it not: I am thy fellow servant, and of **thy brethren that have the testimony of Jesus: worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.** Revelation 19:10

The testimony of Jesus that we hold in our hearts includes the Spirit of Prophecy. Jesus has communicated directly with His church and these things should be in our hearts.

8 And I John saw these things, and heard them. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel which shewed me these things.

9 Then saith he unto me, See thou do it not: for I am thy fellow servant, and of thy brethren the prophets, and **of them which keep the sayings of this book:** worship God. Revelation 22:8-9

Keeping the sayings of God's book also includes Joel 2:28-32 and Acts 2:17-18.

28 And it shall come to pass afterward, that **I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions:**

29 And also upon the servants and upon the handmaids in those days will I pour out my spirit.

30 And I will shew wonders in the heavens and in the earth, blood, and fire, and pillars of smoke.

31 The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before the great and the terrible day of the LORD come.

32 And it shall come to pass, that **whosoever shall call on the name of the LORD shall be delivered:** for in mount Zion and in Jerusalem shall be deliverance, as the LORD hath said, and in the remnant whom the LORD shall call. Joel 2:28-32

17 And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, **I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams:**

18 And on my servants and on my handmaidens **I will pour out in those days of my Spirit; and they shall prophesy:** Acts 2:17-18

These things we will hold in our heart. Thus the warnings of the pillars that God has given us through Mrs. White must be followed.

11 And they overcame him **by the blood of the Lamb,** and by the word of their testimony; and **they loved not their lives unto the death.** Revelation 12:11

All these things God's people will follow so that they will receive the help from heaven to do God's will not only to share our faith but to give the warning that must be given to the world.

11. What Danger is there in Accepting the Trinity Doctrine along with New Theology?

Let's expand our view of the Omega Apostasy to include all of the New Theology doctrines and let's ask ourselves what is really being changed? Why would Satan chose to push these new doctrines?

The answer is very simple. Satan began his war with God and against His Son by arguing that the law of God could not be kept. And he claimed, that the law could not be kept, especially after man fell in sin.

Satan, the fallen angel, had declared that no man could keep the law of God after the disobedience of Adam. He claimed the whole race under his control. {5MR 112.1}

But the Son of God answered that question by coming to our world to take our fallen nature and our fallen sinful flesh to show that the law could be kept even in our weakened condition.

We are ever to be thankful that Jesus has proved to us **by actual facts that man can keep the commandments of God, giving contradiction to Satan's falsehood that man cannot keep them.** The Great Teacher came to our world to stand at the head of humanity, to thus elevate and sanctify humanity by His holy obedience to all of God's requirements showing it is possible to obey all the commandments of God. He had demonstrated that a lifelong obedience is possible.--Ms 1, 1892, pp. 1, 2, 6, 7, 8. ("Obedience to God Required," November 15, 1892.) {5MR 113.3}

Jesus showed that Sanctification was possible and He proved it by actual facts! Jesus lived a life without sinning by connecting Himself with the powers of heaven. This is very important. He didn't use His own Divinity, but rather, He called to His father for aid from Heaven that He might receive the powers of heaven! This is the very same way that we can become victorious in our own life.

Christ declared, where stands Satan's throne, there shall stand My cross, the instrument of humiliation and suffering. **No single principle of human nature will I violate.** Clothing My divinity with humility, I will endure every temptation wherewith man is beset. **I will call to My aid the powers of heaven, that men and women, imbued with My Spirit, may overcome as I overcame.** . . . The working out of My purposes in behalf of degraded humanity require that divine and human forces be combined. . . . {5MR 114.1}

This is an amazing quote from Mrs. White. Jesus said He would violate no single principle of human nature. So, that means Jesus never took advantage of His divinity. Instead He did what we are also able to do, He called to His aid the powers of heaven for His strength. This is exactly the same thing that we can do. If we are imbued with His Spirit, we may overcome as He overcame!

By His life in humanity man may become a partaker of the divine nature. . . . **He was born without a taint of sin, but came into the world in like manner as the human family. He did not have a mere semblance of a body, but he took human nature, participating in the life of humanity.** . . . Christ helps humanity by taking human nature. Thus He lays hold upon man with His long human arm, and upon the throne of God with His divine arm. {5MR 115.1}

. . . The Saviour proposed to re-establish the principles of human dependence upon God and cooperation between God and man. He proposed to unite God and man by the golden chain of love. {5MR 114.2 last part}

Here is how human dependency works. Here is a description how Christ fought His battles:

The humanity of Christ received the fallen foe and engaged in battle with him. He was sustained in the conflict by divine power just as man will be sustained by his being a partaker of the divine nature. He gained victory after victory as our Champion, the Captain of our salvation, and the divine approval of God and all the universe of heaven flowed into His soul. His nature was shocked almost unto death, but the heavenly angels ministered unto the suffering One. {16MR 183.3}

Jesus fought his battles using His human mind and body, but He also was sustained in the battle by divine power from heaven! This is the same power that we can receive to be sustained by God's Spirit because we are a partaker of the divine nature.

Christ had to rescue man from the lowest depths where we are:

For four thousand years the race had been decreasing in physical strength, in mental power, and in moral worth; and Christ took upon Him the infirmities of degenerate humanity. Only thus could He rescue man from the lowest depths of his degradation. {DA 117.1 last part}

A human body and a human mind were His. {6MR 111.2} or {3SM 130.1} or {CTr 213.6}

When Christ did so, He did not sin! He did these things so that we could be saved. The pioneers also believed that we are now able, in his strength, to be victorious over our sins.

The Holy Spirit was promised to be with those who were wrestling for victory, in demonstration of all mightiness, endowing the human agent with supernatural powers, and instructing the ignorant in the mysteries of the kingdom of God. **That the Holy Spirit is to be the grand helper, is a wonderful promise.** Of what avail would it have been to us that the only begotten Son of God had humbled Himself, endured the temptations of the wily foe, and wrestled with him during His entire life on earth, and died the Just for the unjust that humanity might not perish, if the Spirit had not been given as a constant working, regenerating agent to make effectual in our cases what has been wrought out by the world's Redeemer? . . . {5MR 113.1}

Are we wrestling for victory using all the help that has been promised us? Are we acquainted with all the help that we receive from Christ our High Priest? This truth is no longer believed by the Corporate SDA Church. Satan has been working to change our religion. He has sought to separate us from the knowledge we need in order to fight the battle for truth and for our eternal lives in the time of trouble. However, God has made sure that we still have the old books that Mrs. White and the Adventist pioneers wrote that help explain what the Bible really teaches; Especially the truths that will be needed in the last days. We need to study these things so we can discover the help we have in Jesus.

So, we now find ourselves in a real serious situation. Since these now lost truths are what would be especially needed to help us make it through the time of trouble that is just ahead of us! We need to retrieve these indispensable truths for our eternal survival. If we are too indolent to struggle long and hard with God, to gain the blessings needful for this time; If we do not develop a faith that will survive hunger, long delay, and real trouble; If we do not forsake our sins, approaching the throne of Grace provided by Jesus in the most holy place of the Sanctuary; if we do not reach up to Jesus so that divinity with humanity can be combined in overcoming sin as Jesus did; We will be part of the group that is left by the wayside and naked in the day of judgement. We will not have the righteousness of Jesus placed over us. Thus we will be forever lost and given up in utter ruin!

What I have just quickly outlined, concerning our help we have in Jesus, are a few things that the Adventist pioneers understood very clearly. They knew that it was Bible based. So, I believe that the change in our church doctrines is an apostasy from the truth. I believe that this apostasy is the one foretold to happen to us in our

Adventist church? The historical evidence, in chapter 9 of this study, shows how God’s people were warned of an apostasy that would take place in the church in the last days.

Now, the beginning of this apostasy started with God Himself. Is the trinity correct or is the truth really about the Father and His Son? So, “Was what the Pioneers believed, about the Godhead, right or wrong?” (*Trinity* by Jerry Moon)??? Both the pioneers and today’s church can’t both be right. They are almost opposite positions!

Jerry Moon really identified the issue: “Either the pioneers were wrong and the present church is right, or the pioneers were right and the present SDA Church has apostatized from Biblical truth.” (*Trinity* by Jerry Moon, page 190) That is the question. If the pioneers were right about who God is, and my research easily confirms their position, then the Adventist church today has actually apostatized from the Biblical truth which God specifically gave us.

What does that mean for us today? If the church has really apostatized then what should we do? And of course, the Trinity doctrine was just the first step in this apostasy. The set of doctrines of the “New Theology” has helped entrance the church into a deeper apostasy away from truth.

God does not give out new truth if it contradicts with old light. He originally led our church to accept important truths. But for what purpose would God suddenly give our little church new truth that does away with everything that we have stood for in the past? And mind you, much of the old truth was given to us by God through his prophet.

When the power of God testifies as to what is truth, **that truth is to stand forever as the truth. No aftersuppositions, contrary to the light God has given are to be entertained.** Men will arise with interpretations of Scripture which are to them truth, but which are not truth. **The truth for this time, God has given us as a foundation for our faith. He Himself has taught us what is truth.** One will arise, and still another, with new light which contradicts the light that God has given under the demonstration of His Holy Spirit. {Counsels to Writers and Editors (1946) - CW 31.2}

New Theology doctrines are contrary to the original SDA doctrines. If truth is to stand forever as the truth then how can new theology be truth? We must not be surface readers. We need to be sure of the truth and that God has given us the foundation of truth for our faith. Here is a short list of examples showing the dramatic change in the beliefs of our church:

<u>Original SDA Doctrines</u>	<u>New Theology</u>
The Father & His Son	The Trinity
The Law of God is all important	The Law of God is not an all important issue
God’s people will be overcomers	Gods people will sin, up until Jesus comes
Two phases of Atonement: The cross and also Christ’s atoning work in the Heavenly Sanctuary	The atonement was all done at the cross Jesus cannot be atoning for our sins in Heaven now
The warning of The Three Angels’ Messages	The “Gospel” is preached instead
The nature of man: A weakened nature	The nature of man: Original Sin Doctrine
Jesus is our example in overcoming sin in the flesh	We cannot overcome sin with our present nature
Jesus became a man with sinful flesh on earth	Jesus became a man with an unfallen nature
Jesus overcame sin just as we are to overcome sin	Man is not able to overcome as Jesus did

I think we can have an idea why this is all happening now, that Satan is especially attacking this truth. It is because the truth is going to be needed by God’s people almost immediately.

It is obvious that we are approaching the end of the world. Government computers that can control every aspect of our lives is not only possible but they could already be in operation. In addition, we have had weapons of war that are capable of killing major portions of the world's population. In addition, these kinds of weapons are now being placed in the hands of more unstable third-world countries. We could face a nuclear pulse attack or worse from a number of different places. Also, those of us who live in the US, possibly the country with the most freedom in our world, we can see that our liberties and freedoms are slowly being taken away from us and the Constitution is no longer looked on with favor by our leaders. The whole world, US included, is strongly moving toward a Socialistic and Communistic type of control for the masses. The signs are clear that we are approaching a time in the world where Satan will be able to rule the world with an iron hand. It is only a matter of time.

So, the timing is very interesting:

“Satan’s snares are laid for us as verily as they were laid for the children of Israel just prior to their entrance into the land of Canaan. We are repeating the history of that people.” {5T 160}

Satan will bring the SDA church into a position where it cannot help itself, exactly when the trouble of the last days suddenly starts. Our church began with the truth. But Satan has worked hard to do away with the truth that will help us in the time of the end. The very time we will need that truth, it will be unavailable to many or most Adventists. Also, the three angels messages, which are the very truth that our church was set up to preach in the last days will be done away with!

The Great Controversy has the very light that is presently being Rejected

Mrs. White wrote a book which she valued above all her other books. It was called the *Great Controversy*. She speaks of the light that is in that book. This book has the pillars of our church within it. The first third of the book tells of the early history of the Christian church showing how certain truths were lost and then regained. That history is useful in better understanding the last third part of the book where God's people will again face the very same kind of hard persecution in the last days.

The middle third of the book covers most of the major doctrines that deal with our salvation. These are the very pillars of our church that are being contested: The Three Angels' Messages, The Sanctuary service, The second atonement by Christ, Christ's priesthood, The Law of God, forsaking all our sins, The Sabbath, A special knowledge of Satan, and all the other truths that will help the righteous make it through the last days. This middle section will also help us to understand the last day events that are spelled out in the last third of the book. Then the last third of the book covers the actual conditions of the end of time. It also further explains many of these needed doctrines that we need to know.

That means the Great Controversy contains virtually all the doctrines that are now in question within the present SDA church. So, it makes sense to me that leaders have almost always attacked this book and also discouraged us from handing it out to the public. It contains the pillars of our faith! (Also note that Patriarchs and Prophets also has many of the same doctrines plus other important topics that we need to understand.) These two books cover the beginning and the ending of the great controversy.

Many will depart from the faith and give heed to seducing spirits. Patriarchs and Prophets and The Great Controversy, are books **that are especially adapted to those who have newly come to the faith, that they may be established in the truth.** **The dangers are pointed out that should be avoided by the churches.** **Those who become thoroughly acquainted with the lessons in these books will see the dangers before them,** and will be able to discern the plain, straight path marked out for them. They will be kept from strange paths. They will make straight paths for their feet, lest the lame be turned out of the way.--Letter 229, 1903.

Notice that Mrs. White talks about people who leave the original faith. She says that they believe the lies of evil spirits! She must be mentioning the apostasy that we are presently in, concerning the pillar doctrines. Also notice that the truths in these two books will establish a person in the real truth. They will see the dangers that are before them and the truth presented will enable them to walk in the right direction.

Satan has worked to try to keep the Great Controversy from reaching the public.

The keeping of Great Controversy from the field has done a work that men will have to answer for in the judgment. {Manuscript 64, 1894}

The leaders wanted Bible Readings to be before the public at the expense of making the Great Controversy available. But the Great Controversy had the great light of heaven:

“I do not demerit Bible Readings. It is a book which will do a great amount of good, but it can never take the place **the Lord designed that Volume four [Great Controversy] should have in the world and among our people. I have spread before them the light given me of heaven in that book.**” {Manuscript E-25a 1889}

“This book has to a great degree been misplaced by another book, which has kept from the world **the light God has given.**” {Manuscript 24, 1891}

God designed the Great Controversy to go before both the world and God’s people and it was to be moved with great urgency:

I was moved by the Spirit of the Lord to write that book [Great Controversy], and while working upon it, I felt a great burden upon my soul. I knew that time was short, that the scenes which are soon to crowd upon us would at the last come very suddenly and swiftly, as represented in the words of Scripture: “The day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night” (1 Thessalonians 5:2). {Selected Messages Vol. 3 - 3SM 113.4}

The Lord has set before me matters which are of urgent importance for the present time, and which reach into the future. The words have been spoken in a charge to me, “Write in a book the things which thou hast seen and heard, and let it go to all people; for the time is at hand when past history will be repeated.” **I have been aroused at one, two, or three o’clock in the morning, with some point forcibly impressed upon my mind, as if spoken by the voice of God. I was shown that many of our own people were asleep in their sins, and although they claimed to be Christians, they would perish unless they were converted.** {3SM 113.5}

The solemn impressions made upon my mind as the truth was laid out in clear lines before me, I tried to bring before others, that **each might feel the necessity of having a religious experience for himself, of having a knowledge of the Saviour for himself, of seeking repentance, faith, love, hope, and holiness for himself.** {Selected Messages Vol. 3 - 3SM 113.6}

I was assured that there was no time to lose. The appeals and warnings must be given; our churches must be aroused, must be instructed, that they may give the warning to all whom they can possibly reach, **declaring that the sword is coming, that the Lord’s anger upon a profligate world will not long be deferred.** I was shown that many would listen to the warning. Their minds would be prepared to discern the very things that it pointed out to them. {Selected Messages Vol. 3 - 3SM 114.1}

I was shown that much of my time had been occupied in speaking to the people, when **it was more essential that I should devote myself to writing out the important matters for Volume IV, [THE 1888 EDITION OF THE GREAT CONTROVERSY]** that the warning must go where the living messenger could not go, and that it would call the attention of many to the important events to occur in the closing scenes of this world’s history. {Selected Messages Vol. 3 - 3SM 114.2}

As the condition of the church and the world was opened before me, and **I beheld the fearful scenes that lie just before us, I was alarmed at the outlook;** and night after night, while all in the house were sleeping, I

wrote out the things given me of God. **I was shown the heresies which are to arise, the delusions that will prevail**, the miracle-working power of Satan--the false Christs that will appear--that will deceive the greater part even of the religious world, and that would, if it were possible, draw away even the elect. {Selected Messages Vol. 3 - 3SM 114.3 from letter 1, 1890}

In the second and third paragraphs above: Mrs. White said she had solemn impressions that each person needed to have a true religious experience for themselves. Most were asleep in their sins. To be saved they must seek repentance, faith, love hope, and holiness for themselves.

People who are asleep in their sins are needing to seek repentance and holiness for themselves. This point speaks of the very issues that the pillars of our faith center on. It's the very heart of the urgency that Mrs. White felt while she was writing her book.

In the last paragraph in the quote above, we see that She was shown the various heresies and delusions that will arise. As we approach the end, these heresies will deceive the majority of Adventists. It is the work to draw away even the elect of God's people. The danger is very real! So, the danger of accepting the Trinity heresy along with all the other heresies of the new theology is that we will fail to do what is required of us in order to be saved. We will not seek to get rid of our sins.

If we have not already determined what is truth, we need to correctly determine for ourselves whether the Trinity doctrine and the whole New Theology set of doctrines are actually taught in the Bible and the Spirit of Prophecy. Because, if we are wrong, our belief on these issues could have drastic consequences on our own survival in eternity!

Take time and study the book *Great Controversy*. It will help you to know what is truth. The specific truths that will be needed in the time of the end.

Is a Wrong Conception of God, tainted with Paganism, the same as Baal Worship?

Here is a real serious issue. Are Christians today taking part in idolatry, because they worship a Trinity god? Idolatry, paganism and baal worship are things that God has hated. Could we be serving some other god when we serve a Trinity god?

The present age is one of idolatry as verily as was that in which Elijah lived. No outward shrines may be visible, there may be no image for the eye to rest upon, yet thousands are following after the gods of this world, - after riches, fame, pleasure, **and the pleasing fables that permit man to follow the inclinations of the unregenerate heart.** **Multitudes have a wrong conception of God and of his attributes, and are as truly serving a false god as were the worshipers of Baal.** Review and Herald, November 6, 1913 par. 1

There are multitudes who have a wrong conception of God and of his attributes. Of course, we know that the multitudes of today's Christian world all believe in the Trinity. As was mentioned before, to be a member of the World Council of Churches, a church must believe in the Trinity. So, could these people be committing a form of idolatry?

Mrs. White says these people are serving a false god as truly as the worshipers of Baal did years ago! We know that idolatry is hateful in the eyes of God because these people are actually serving Satan!

This conception of the Trinity God allows the multitudes to follow the inclinations of their unregenerate heart because they are not required to get sin out of their lives. It does not seem to matter; Whether as a Catholic, one is saved by following a set of rules; Or whether as a Protestant, one is saved by faith without any

effort on our part. The Trinity doctrine accommodates them both because the law of God is largely ignored. The Trinity God provides pleasing fables allowing man to follow their own sinful heart because it does not provide the reason nor the power to overcome sins! Again we read:

He who denies the personality of God and of his Son Jesus Christ, is denying God and Christ. “If that which ye have heard from the beginning shall remain in you, ye also shall continue in the Son, and in the Father.” **If you continue to believe and obey the truths you first embraced regarding the personality of the Father and the Son, you will be joined together with him in love.** {Review and Herald, March 8 1906 par 19}

Now we see that denying God and Christ can be committed by denying the personality of God and of His Son! Thus, we would become an idol worshipper just like the old Baal worshippers by serving a false god. It is no wonder that Mrs. What says we must reject every error that denies the personality of God and of Christ!

I entreat every one to be clear and firm regarding the certain truths that we have heard and received and advocated. The statements of God’s Word are plain. **Plant your feet firmly on the platform of eternal truth. Reject every phase of error**, even though it be covered with a semblance of reality, **which denies the personality of God and of Christ.** {Review and Herald, August 31, 1905 par. 11}

This is a very big issue in today’s world since virtually all Christians espouse the Trinity god which actually comes from Paganism! We are to reject everything that has the teaching of Satan.

So, we are to plant our feet firmly on the platform of eternal truth because our life depends upon the one we serve. This is why the personality of God is everything to us as a people.

“you are not definitely clear on the personality of God, which is everything to us as a people. You have virtually destroyed the Lord God Himself”. Letter 300, 1903 EGW in letter to Kellogg

To go against the truth of the personality of God virtually destroys the Lord God Himself! If these things seem like a small issue then we need to note this in the Great Controversy:

The Bible declares that before the coming of the Lord, Satan will work “with all power and signs and lying wonders, and with all deceivableness of unrighteousness;” **and they that “received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved,” will be left to receive “strong delusion, that they should believe a lie.”** 2 Thessalonians 2:9-11. Not until this condition shall be reached, and the union of the church with the world shall be fully accomplished throughout Christendom, will the fall of Babylon be complete. The change is a progressive one, and the perfect fulfillment of Revelation 14:8 is yet future. {Great Controversy - GC 389.3}

If we do not have a love for the truth, it will be easy for us to believe the lies that Satan has for us. The reason for this is simple. If we are not absolute lovers of the truth, we will not be searching for truth as we should. Thus, when the time comes when Satan will hit us with his hardest attack of all, we will not have the needed background of truth to allow us to stand against that attack. We will not detect the deceiver in his disguise. Look at this next quote:

Only those who have been **diligent students of the Scriptures** and who have received **the love of the truth will be shielded from the powerful delusion that takes the world captive. By the Bible testimony these will detect the deceiver in his disguise.** To all the testing time will come. By the sifting of temptation the genuine Christian will be revealed. **Are the people of God now so firmly established upon His word that they would not yield to the evidence of their senses?** Would they, in such a crisis, cling to the Bible and the Bible only? **Satan will, if possible, prevent them from obtaining a preparation to stand in that day.** He will so arrange

affairs as to hedge up their way, entangle them with earthly treasures, cause them to carry a heavy, wearisome burden, that their hearts may be overcharged with the cares of this life and the day of trial may come upon them as a thief. {Great Controversy - GC 625.3}

Are we established in the word of God? Do we have the love of the truth? Are we so completely grounded in the truth that we would rather follow the truth rather than to yield to the evidences of our senses? Satan will try to prevent us from having that love of the truth and from obtaining a preparation to stand in that day of the end.

Satanic agencies are clothing false theories in an attractive garb, even as Satan in the Garden of Eden concealed his identity from our first parents by speaking through the serpent. These agencies are instilling into human minds that which in reality **is deadly error. The hypnotic influence of Satan will rest upon those who turn from the plain word of God to pleasing fables.** {Testimonies for the Church Vol. 8 - 8T 294.1}

It is those who have had the most light that Satan most assiduously seeks to ensnare. He knows that if he can deceive them, they will, under his control, clothe sin with garments of righteousness, and lead many astray. {Testimonies for the Church Vol. 8 - 8T 294.2}

I say to all: Be on your guard; for as an angel of light Satan is walking in every assembly of Christian workers, and in every church, trying to win the members to his side. I am bidden to give to the people of God the warning: "Be not deceived; God is not mocked." Galatians 6:7. {Testimonies for the Church Vol. 8 - 8T 294.3}

This is of special note! Satan will especially try to ensnare those with the most light! Adventists have had that light but we are now taking up pleasing fables to take its place. It is Satan's hypnotic influence to turn us away from the plain word of God!

Do we have the love of the truth that we will search for it like treasure? Those who do not think that the subject of the personality of God and Jesus, or the Heavenly Sanctuary, for example, is important and will risk being taken in by Satan when he makes strong delusions so that the people will believe a lie.

Actually, the changing of our beliefs, like the personality of God and Jesus, and the Heavenly Sanctuary, are some of the strongest evidences that Satan's hypnotic influence has already begun. And the disbelief of these truths will take us away from the plain word of God just when we need it.

Satan's Main Purpose is to be Like God, and to Rule Over Man

This is the Big issue! Who are we going to serve? Idolatry is a major point in the Great Controversy since Satan's main goal is to be worshipped and honored as God:

12 How you are fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! How you are cut down to the ground, You who weakened the nations!

13 For you have said in your heart: '**I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God; I will also sit on the mount of the congregation On the farthest sides of the north;**

14 **I will ascend above the heights of the clouds, I will be like the Most High.**'

15 Yet you shall be brought down to Sheol, To the lowest depths of the Pit. Isaiah 14:12-15

Satan has not given up on being worshipped. He has made it his life's work to have the whole world to follow after him in worship:

Satan is busily laying his plans for the last mighty conflict, when all will take sides. After the gospel has been proclaimed in the world for nearly two thousand years, Satan still presents to men and women the same scene

that he presented to Christ. In a wonderful manner he causes the kingdoms of the world in their glory to pass before them. **These he promises to all who will fall down and worship him. Thus he seeks to bring men under his dominion.** {6T 14.2}

Satan is working to the utmost to make himself as God and to destroy all who oppose his power. And today the world is bowing before him. **His power is received as the power of God.** The prophecy of the Revelation is being fulfilled, that **“all the world wondered after the beast.”** Revelation 13:3. {6T 14.3}

Men in their blindness boast of wonderful progress and enlightenment; but to the eye of Omniscience are revealed the inward guilt and depravity. The heavenly watchers see the earth filled with violence and crime. Wealth is obtained by every species of robbery, not robbery of men only, but of God. Men are using His means to gratify their selfishness. Everything they can grasp is made to minister to their greed. Avarice and sensuality prevail. Men cherish the attributes of the first great deceiver. **They have accepted him as God, and have become imbued with his spirit.** {6T 14.4}

So, Satan is calling for the world to worship him and he even gives them power as if he were God. This is the power that the world receives, the spirit of Satan, but they think it is God!

Our doctrines actually protect us from these attacks of Satan! Thus, Satan has had to change our doctrines so that he could rule over us. So, we must have a love for God's truth because it is the doctrines themselves that can help us to know what to do and believe. Otherwise, we may choose to serve the wrong master by mistake. Here is an important example:

I saw the Father rise from the throne, and in a flaming chariot go into the holy of holies within the veil, and sit down. Then Jesus rose up from the throne, and the most of those who were bowed down arose with Him. **I did not see one ray of light pass from Jesus to the careless multitude after He arose, and they were left in perfect darkness.** Those who arose when Jesus did, kept their eyes fixed on Him as He left the throne and led them out a little way. Then He raised His right arm, and we heard His lovely voice saying, “Wait here; I am going to My Father to receive the kingdom; keep your garments spotless, and in a little while I will return from the wedding and receive you to Myself.” Then a cloudy chariot, with wheels like flaming fire, surrounded by angels, came to where Jesus was. He stepped into the chariot and was borne to the holiest, where the Father sat. There I beheld Jesus, a great High Priest, standing before the Father. On the hem of His garment was a bell and a pomegranate, a bell and a pomegranate. Those who rose up with Jesus would send up their faith to Him in the holiest, and pray, “My Father, give us Thy Spirit.” Then Jesus would breathe upon them the Holy Ghost. In that breath was light, power, and much love, joy, and peace. {EW 55.1}

I turned to look at the company who were still bowed before the throne; they did not know that Jesus had left it. Satan appeared to be by the throne, trying to carry on the work of God. I saw them look up to the throne, and pray, “Father, give us Thy Spirit.” Satan would then breathe upon them an unholy influence; in it there was light and much power, but no sweet love, joy, and peace. Satan's object was to keep them deceived and to draw back and deceive God's children. {EW 56.1}

Satan is going to be controlling the Christian masses, both Adventist and the others. But it is only those who know the truth about God and His Son because they are the only ones who will be able to understand what God and His Son are now doing in heaven. They will know about their High Priest in heaven and the atonement. Thus they will know of their need to approach the throne of grace to keep their garments spotless.

The believers who are ignorant of the fact that Jesus had moved, they probably do not believe in the Heavenly Sanctuary Service nor do they believe that God and Jesus have a physical bodies. The popular belief is that the Father is Spirit. Thus the moving from place to place in heaven is no longer believed. In addition, it is no longer believed that any atonement process actually occurs in Heaven because they believe it was all done at the cross. So the whole idea of the Father and Christ moving to the Most Holy Place and that it has any importance to our salvation is not believed nor understood.

Because of this confusion Satan then takes advantage of the situation and He acts as the holy spirit, the third person. So, when people pray for the spirit, which spirit do they actually receive? We might then ask: What god are they asking? Are they asking the Trinity God which is of Satan's devising or are they asking the God of the Bible, the Father and Son?

In the next chapter we will see that the Trinity doctrine actually agrees with virtually none of what the Bible teaches. It changes Bible truth into the doctrines of devils! But before we do, let's look into how Satan set up this Trinity belief and then we will look in the Bible to see how much God hates this doctrine.

Paganism is the Origin of the Trinity in Christianity

If Satan is trying to act as God in trying to fulfill the part of the Holy Spirit in our lives, could he be using the Trinity Doctrine as his way into the soul? This could be a real issue! The question: "Who are we going to serve?" could have a profound affect on our lives. So, could we be serving some other god when we serve a Trinity god? Idolatry is a major point in the Great Controversy since Satan's main goal is to be worshipped and honored as God.

Since it is not explained or mentioned in the Bible, where did the Trinity doctrine come from? It seems strange that we as Bible believing Christians would actually be tempted to believe something like the Trinity. Especially when it isn't found in the Bible. Let's look at a quote from the Encyclopedia Britannica so we can start to understand the history of the origins of the Trinity doctrine:

Neither the word Trinity nor the explicit doctrine appears in the New Testament, nor did Jesus and his followers intend to contradict the Shema in the Hebrew Scriptures: "Hear, O Israel: The Lord our God is one Lord" (Deuteronomy 6:4) . . .

The doctrine [of the Trinity] developed gradually over several centuries and through many controversies. Initially, both the requirements of monotheism inherited from the Hebrew Scriptures and the implications of **the need to interpret the biblical teaching to Greco-Roman religions** seemed to demand that the divine in Christ as the Word, or Logos, be interpreted as subordinate to the Supreme Being. An alternative solution was to interpret Father, Son, and Holy Spirit as three modes of the self-disclosure of the one God but not as distinct within the being of God itself. . . It was not until the 4th century that the distinctness of the three and their unity were brought together in a single orthodox doctrine of one essence and three persons.

. . . **by the end of the 4th century**, under the leadership of . . . (the Cappadocian Fathers), **the doctrine of the Trinity took substantially the form it has maintained ever since.** . . . {Taken from Encyclopedia Britannica web page: www.britannica.com/EBchecked/topic/605512/Trinity }

The Trinity doctrine developed at the time when Paganism started coming into the church. The article above tells us that there was a **need to interpret the biblical teaching to Greco-Roman religions**. These were Pagan religions. So, the leaders in the early church made compromises to make it easy for the Pagan believers to come into the church. This shows that there was no real change in these people. They were able to worship the same way as before. But now, they used different names for whom they worshipped. The changes were slight.

This was the same time when the first Sunday law was officially endorsed, to honor the pagan sun god. Whole armies were also converted to Christianity just by having them march across rivers in order to baptize them into the Christian church. Again, there was no real change in the people coming into the church. So, the Trinity doctrine along with most or all of the doctrines that formed during that time are obviously a compromise of the Christian religion with pagan ideas.

There seems to be even political reasons why the Trinity was adopted with favor. The bishop of Rome was actually able to exalt himself to the throne by his adopting of the Trinity doctrine.

But to hold the doctrine of the trinity is not so much an evidence of evil intention as of intoxication from that wine of which all the nations have drunk. **The fact that this was one of the leading doctrines, if not the very chief, upon which the bishop of Rome was exalted to the popedom, does not say much in its favor.** This should cause men to investigate it for themselves; as when the spirits of devils working miracles undertake the advocacy of the immortality of the soul. Had I never doubted it before, I would now probe it to the bottom, by that word which modern Spiritualism sets at nought. (R. F. Cottrell, Review and Herald, July 6th 1869, ‘The Trinity’)

The bishop of Rome actually used the Trinity Doctrine to exalt himself to the level of being the pope. So, it was partially a political act. But we must also remember that it was considered very important that the people must be united in one religion for a kingdom to have stability and power. That way they felt they could have a united front against any enemy that might attack them.

Thus the Catholic church became known as the church of the Trinity, the Universal Church. If you didn’t believe in the Trinity, you were not considered to be a Christian at all. All writings of those who were not Trinitarians were destroyed. The people who didn’t believe in the Trinity were not called Christians but Arians. It became a derogatory term.

“The writings of the Arians, if they had been permitted to exist, would perhaps contain the lamentable story of the **persecution**, which afflicted the church under the reign of the impious Theodosius; and the sufferings of their holy confessors might claim the pity of the disinterested reader.” (Gibbon, The decline and Fall of the Roman Empire”, Volume 3 page 9)

The church then attacked the Arians, calling them heretics, and destroyed their writings.

“In the space of fifteen years, he [Theodosius] promulgated at least fifteen severe edicts against the heretics; more especially against those who rejected the doctrine of the Trinity; and to deprive them of every hope of escape, he sternly enacted, that if any laws or rescripts should be alleged in their favor, the judges should consider them as the illegal productions either of fraud or forgery. The penal statutes were directed against the ministers, the assemblies, and the persons of the heretics; and the passions of the legislator were expressed in the language of declamation and invective.” (Gibbon, The decline and Fall of the Roman Empire”, Volume 3 page 9)

What the Catholic church eventually did was to kill everyone they could get their hands on, who would not believe in the Trinity or any of their other doctrines. Many of these doctrines came from Pagan worship itself. Here is a partial list of some of the changes that came to the early church over a period of hundreds of years:

The Trinity, Sunday-keeping, sprinkling, Confession, Natural Immortality, Easter Christmas and even Halloween (Originally celebrated as the “holy evening” before All Saints’ Day) etc., Endless Torture of the Wicked, Purgatory, Prayers for the dead, Veneration of angels and dead saints, prayer to Mary dead saints and angels, use of images, Exaltation of Mary “mother of God”, Mass as a daily celebration, Making the sign of the cross.

The doctrine of the Trinity which was established in the church by the council of Nice, A.D. 325. **This doctrine destroys the personality of God, and his Son Jesus Christ our Lord. The infamous, measures by which it was forced upon the church which appear upon the pages of ecclesiastical history might well cause every believer in that doctrine to blush.** {J. N. Andrews, Review & Herald, March 6, 1855}

There were ten tribes in Europe but three of the tribes were destroyed and plucked up by the roots: the Heruli in A.D. 493, the Vandals in 534, and the Ostrogoths in 553. These three tribes did not believe in the

trinity. One of the primary reasons why virtually all Christians are Trinitarians today is that all those who didn't believe in the Trinity in the past were killed. They were opposed to the teachings and claims of the papal hierarchy. {Daniel and the Revelation by Uriah Smith p. 72, 75, 76}

It should be clear that the Trinity doctrine along with Sunday keeping and all the other pagan inherited doctrines did not come from the Bible. It was because the church assumed its own authority to add these doctrines that they entered into the early church.

What is it that God really Hates?

Let's look in the Bible to better understand what it is that God hates. During Ezekiel's time captives had already been taken to Babylon and Ezekiel was among that group. But God called Ezekiel and pointed out to him what was still happening in Jerusalem. The people still had not learned their lesson about following God. Judah's idolatry was now reaching a point where God would no longer let things continue. Thus God's Judgment on Judah was about to strike. Let's look at Ezekiel 8 and 9 to see why God was so angry with His people.

Various Pagan beliefs and practices were actually taking over the worship of God in the Temple of God in Jerusalem! We can read what they were doing in Ezekiel 8. There are four major transgressions which angered God. They are as follows:

1. The Image of Jealousy (Ezekiel 8:3-5).
2. The Idols of Israel drawn on the walls of the temple and people's homes (Ezekiel 8:10-12).
3. Women weeping for Tammuz (Ezekiel 8:14).
4. 25 men with their backs to the temple worshipping the sun (Ezekiel 8:16).

These abominations are listed from bad to worse. So each one is worse than the one before. The first one, the Image of Jealousy, is a sun pillar or an obelisk. This, by the way, is also found in modern Christianity as well.

And so, the very same obelisk that once stood at the ancient pagan temple at the center of Egyptian paganism now stands before the temple that is the CENTER of modern paganism--the so called Cathedral of St. Peter, the "Mother" church of Catholicism. (Ralph Woodrow, *Babylon Mystery Religion*, pp. 42-43)

Not only is a 132 foot high obelisk in the center of Vatican square but the street leading up to the Vatican is lined with obelisks on both sides of the street! We are probably not surprised at this, but the Protestants are also not free from it. Sun pillars started appearing on Christians churches as far back as 600 A.D. That was before any Protestants were around. However, when Protestants came along, they continued the practice. Today many Protestant churches still have obelisks on the church itself. It is actually a phallic symbol that points to the sun, but today we call them steeples. That is where the steeple came from. It is of Pagan origin. These structures have been associated with Pagan worship since the beginning:

3 And you shall destroy their altars, **break their sacred pillars**, and burn their wooden images with fire; you shall cut down the carved images of their gods and destroy their names from that place. Deuteronomy 12:3

The second abomination, which is worse than the first, involve creeping things and abominable beasts. Ezekiel was told to dig a hole in the wall. He did so and found a door. When he entered inside, he saw pictures all over the walls. They were idols, every form of creeping thing and abominable beasts. All of this was in the Temple! In violation of the 2nd Commandment these things were being worshipped in the house of God!

10 So I went in and saw, and there--every sort of creeping thing, abominable beasts, and all the idols of the house of Israel, portrayed all around on the walls.

11 And there stood before them seventy men of the elders of the house of Israel, and in their midst stood Jaazaniah the son of Shaphan. **Each man had a censer in his hand, and a thick cloud of incense went up.** Ezekiel 8:10-11

With each man having a censer, we can see that these things were being worshipped.

13 And He said to me, "Turn again, and you will see greater abominations that they are doing."

14 So He brought me to the door of the north gate of the LORD'S house; **and to my dismay, women were sitting there weeping for Tammuz.**

15 Then He said to me, "Have you seen this, O son of man? . . . Ezekiel 8:13-15

The third abomination, which is again worse than the first two abominations, is "women weeping for Tammuz" In Genesis 10:8-10 we find that Nimrod became the first king after the flood. But he was soon worshipped as god with his wife Semiramis. After Nimrod died, Semiramis became pregnant by an unknown lover and a son was born named Tammuz. He was born on December 25!

So Semiramis called the scribes of Babylon together and announced that Nimrod, through the rays of the sun, had impregnated her. Winter solstice had just occurred a few days before and since the boy was born on December 25, the 25th was the first day that they could actually measure that the day was increasing again; So, it was seen as a sign that the sun which was known to die in the winter, was now reborn. So, Tammuz became known as the "son of the sun god" and Semiramis became known as the "queen of heaven" and the "mother of god." They were the first Trinity and it is sun worship. From this day December 25 was observed as the birthday of the son of the sun-god. Tammuz the holy child was also considered to be a reincarnation of Nimrod. Thus the son was the father and the father was the son. A God had become flesh! So, Tammuz is a false christ, even the so-called second person of the trinity. {Taken from three sources: AT Jones, *The Empire of the Bible*. p. xvii; *The Two Babylons*, p. 36; free stuff from Amazing facts, *Baptized Paganism*}

Tammuz was killed in a hunting accident and the death of the child caused a tremendous amount of mourning. They mourned for him for 40 days. Now, when Tammuz died he was said to ascend up to the sun. So a festival was always held from then on, 40 days before Ishtar's (Easter) festival. They fasted and afflicted themselves to commemorate the suffering and death of Tammuz. So "women weeping for Tammuz" described in Ezekiel is referring to their self-affliction for Tammuz. Once the 40 days were finished, then the people would celebrate the festivities of Ishtar [Easter] who was the queen of heaven and goddess of fertility. These feasts were connected with licentious celebration and even human sacrifices.

The Catholic faith today has copied these celebrations. Today they call them the 40 days of Lent and then they have "Easter sunrise service." Also, the sign of Tammuz was a wooden cross. So, today Catholics make the sign of the cross, yet it actually relates back to Tammuz! {Taken from four sources: AT Jones, *The Empire of the Bible*. p. xvii; *The Two Babylons*, p. 36; free stuff from Amazing facts, *Baptized Paganism*, and also from a James Arrabito program called: *Babylon is Fallen*}

4 and the LORD said to him, "Go through the midst of the city, through the midst of Jerusalem, and **put a mark on the foreheads of the men who sigh and cry over all the abominations that are done within it.**"

5 To the others He said in my hearing, "Go after him through the city and kill; do not let your eye spare, nor have any pity.

6 "Utterly slay old and young men, maidens and little children and women; **but do not come near anyone on whom is the mark;** and begin at My sanctuary." So they began with the elders who were before the temple. Ezekiel 9:4-6

Thus Tammuz represents a trinity god. This is an abomination in the sight of God and we need to take note of this. Something else that is important is the sighing and crying. Remember that those who are going to be saved, those who will have the seal of God, will be those who sigh and cry because of the wicked things that are happening around us, especially of the things that are happening within the church. Everyone else, who are not sighing and crying, will be destroyed!

The fourth abomination, is the worst of all abominations. Twenty-five men with their backs to the temple were facing the east and the sun so that they could worship the sun!

16 So He brought me into the inner court of the LORD'S house; and there, at the door of the temple of the LORD, between the porch and the altar, **were about twenty-five men with their backs toward the temple of the LORD and their faces toward the east, and they were worshiping the sun toward the east.** Ezekiel 8:16

While the first three abominations went against the first and second commandments, this last abomination goes against not only the first two Commandments but also the fourth Commandment!

Those who worship the sun, worship on Sunday, which is the day of the sun. In addition, those who worship the trinity today also worship on Sunday because Sunday has become the day that is dedicated in honor to the trinity god by the Catholic church. So ultimately this fourth abomination could be the worship of Satan on Sunday instead of worshiping the true God on Sabbath. Thus Israel had gotten to the place where, with their backs to God, they were worshiping Satan directly!

Now, it makes sense that Satan would set up some sort of a system so that it would be easy for the world to worship him. Of course there is no Scripture that tells us that we are to honor Sunday or the supposed Trinity god. When the final events of the mark of the beast come, the issue will not only be centered on Sunday but it will be on the god people serve. At that time, almost everyone will acknowledge that it is the trinity god that they serve. They will say to us, after all, we all serve the same god and Sunday is the day that is dedicated to the Trinity god.

Q Catholic reasons for keeping Sunday

A. Because it is a day dedicated by the apostles to the honor of the most Holy Trinity
{Advent Review and Sabbath Herald, April 4, 1854}

Who are We Going to Serve?

So, at the time of the end, the real issue will be: what God do we serve? Do we serve the real God who has made all things in six days and rested on the seventh? If we do, we will worship God the Father and His Son on the Seventh-day Sabbath which God sanctified as the memorial of creation and commanded us to obey in the Fourth Commandment. We will do this because we will have the love for the truth and a love for our Savior!

But, on the other hand, if we worship Satan or the Trinity god, we will worship on the day that Satan has taken for himself, Sunday, the day dedicated to the Trinity and to the sun. Thus we would be worshiping Satan.

12 "Moreover I also gave them My Sabbaths, to be a sign between them and Me, **that they might know that I am the LORD who sanctifies them.**

20 '**hallow My Sabbaths, and they will be a sign between Me and you, that you may know that I am the LORD your God.**' Ezekiel 20:12, 20

It is interesting to me that God will place the seal of God only on the forehead. But but Satan will have the mark of the beast be placed either in the right hand or in the forehead. There is a reason for this! There will be

many who do not agree in their minds with the mark and they will not wish to honor Sunday. However, they will be forced to do it anyway because of their fear, and they will not be able to conquer their fear. They do not have that spiritual experience that only the true God and his Son can give us and they will not be victorious. They will not have that Divine help because they did not reach up to grasp with their weak arm of flesh His strong arm of Divinity.

3 “**And this is eternal life, that they may know You, the only true God, and Jesus Christ** whom You have sent. John 17 3

32 “Those who do wickedly against the covenant he shall corrupt with flattery; **but the people who know their God shall be strong, and carry out great exploits.** Daniel 11:32

The Sabbath will be the test of loyalty because it is what Satan is especially to test us on. Satan knows the Sabbath is extremely important because it shows whom we truly worship. Even if we fully believe the Sabbath and we even now keep the Sabbath; If we are not fully converted we will never survive. Only those who love the truth and every bit of the truth will be victorious. These are those who will fully connect with God. They will Keep God’s commandments and they will have the testimony of Jesus Christ.

Now, the issue of the trinity may seem to be a small thing but Satan has drawn the battle line. His day is Sunday and he has dedicated it to the trinity. He even will try to act the part of the Holy Spirit as we have seen. We will be weakened if we do not realize what the trinity represents and that we are to have no part with it.

Council of Trent 1545 - 1563

This council was called by Pope Paul III and it met in three different sessions. The Protestants were at the second meeting.

The Protestants have always said that the Catholic Church had apostatized from the truth. They believed in Scriptures as the ultimate authority while the Catholic Church followed both Scripture and tradition and that the Bible had to be interpreted by the church. So, the council of Trent was called to address these issues.

Even among many Catholics was a strong group that thought tradition should be abandoned. So, even among Catholics there was “a strong tendency to set aside tradition altogether and to make Scripture the sole standard of appeal.”

But there was an ultra-Catholic group that wanted to convince all the others that “Scripture and tradition” was the only safe way. If they could convince the others then they knew they would be able to condemn the Reformation. So this question was highly debated. But it was such a heated battle that no one was able to get the upper hand.

Then, the Protestants were challenged by the Archbishop of Reggio in a way which they just could not answer. Here are his own words translated into English:

The Protestants claim to stand upon the written word only. They profess to hold the Scripture alone as the standard of faith. They justify their revolt by the plea that the Church has apostatized from the written word and follows tradition. Now the protestants’ claim, that they stand upon the written word only, is not true. Their profession of holding the Scripture alone as the standard of faith, is false.

The written word explicitly enjoins the observance of the seventh day as the Sabbath. They do not observe the seventh day, but reject it. If they do truly hold the Scripture alone as their standard, they would be observing the seventh day as is enjoined in the Scripture throughout. Yet they not only reject the observance of the

Sabbath enjoined in the written word, but they have adopted and do practice the observance of Sunday, for which they have only the tradition of the Church. Consequently the claim of ‘Scripture alone as the standard,’ fails; and the doctrine of ‘Scripture and tradition’ as essential, is fully established, the Protestants themselves being judges. {<http://www.sabbathtruth.com/sabbath-history/the-council-of-trent> and *Rome’s Challenge*, p. 25-27}

There was no way to get around this point because their own statement of faith, the Augsburg Confession in 1530, clearly declared that their observation of the Lord’s day had been appointed by “the church” only.

The protestant reformers did not seek for Bible truth as they should have. They didn’t have the love of the truth. So because the Protestants did not want to give up Sunday, they actually surrendered their hard-won position of using only the Bible! Immediately the council unanimously condemned Protestantism and the whole Reformation as being an unwarranted revolt from the communion and authority of the Catholic Church! The Protestants weren’t even consistent with their beliefs.

Thus, the Council reaffirmed the doctrines that were disputed by the Protestants. The council then wrote two decrees. The first one stated, under anathema, that Scripture and tradition are to be received and venerated equally. The second is that the apocryphal books be part of the canon of Scripture.

Several other doctrines of the Catholic church were reaffirmed at the Council: Transubstantiation, Justification by faith and works, The mass, The seven sacraments, Celibacy, Purgatory, Indulgences, and also, the Pope was given increased papal power to enforce the decrees of the Council requiring church officials to promise him obedience. Thus the church strengthened their hold on these false doctrines.

If the Protestants had been true to the Word of God, this defeat could have been a victory because there were many even within the Catholic Church at that time which thought that the Protestants were correct. But now the Protestants were seen as inconsistent or even worse. So, the council of Trent became the beginning of the Counter Reformation that is continuing onto this day.

Could We Face a Similar Situation with the Trinity Doctrine?

There are a lot of questions we could ask ourselves at this point. Do we follow the Bible and the Bible only or do we follow some tradition like the early Protestants did? Do we have a love for the truth that God has given us or do we think something like the Trinity is really a small matter?

What might happen if we continue to believe in the Trinity in spite of it not being found in the Scriptures? If we were to hold on to the Trinity Doctrine, we might find ourselves in a compromised position when we thought we were solidly on the Lord’s side. When the Sunday Law comes we might even be asked about tradition. We might even be asked what we believe concerning the Trinity. At that stage, if we still believed in the Trinity, we might be asked why we believe in the Trinity yet we are not willing to worship the Trinity on the day of the Trinity? Sunday has been dedicated to the Trinity god.

The early Protestants failed their chance because they did not practice what they preach. They said they followed Scripture alone, yet when they were cornered, they were found to also follow tradition. And when it was brought to their attention, they were still unwilling to correct their mistake. Don’t think that this kind of question won’t come up for us. We are told that everything that we believe will come up for review.

Our people have been regarded as too insignificant to be worthy of notice, but a change will come. The Christian world is now making movements which will necessarily bring commandment-keeping people into prominence. **There is a constant supplanting of God’s truth by the theories and false doctrines of human**

origin. Movements are being set on foot to enslave the consciences of those who would be loyal to God. The lawmaking powers will be against God's people. Every soul will be tested. Oh, that we would, as a people, be wise for ourselves, and by precept and example impart that wisdom to our children! **Every position of our faith will be searched into; and if we are not thorough Bible students, established, strengthened, and settled, the wisdom of the world's great men will lead us astray.** {5T 546.2}

There are many conservative Adventists who have either separated from the established SDA church because they believe the truths that the church once held. There are others who are still in the main church who also believe these truths. However, most of them are not rejecting the Trinity doctrine. They might find a surprise at the end when the Trinity doctrine is laid bare before them as not being found in the Bible. What will they do then? Every position that we hold will be searched into and we need to be thorough Bible students that love the truth.

We need to be Converted and Feed on the Word

The time of the end is a special time very different from previous times. Christians clearly did not understand then what we must understand now. We must have a love for God and His honor and His truth that He has given us. In addition, with a truly converted heart, we will sigh and cry over all the abominations that are happening within our church.

4 and the LORD said to him, "Go through the midst of the city, through the midst of Jerusalem, and **put a mark on the foreheads of the men who sigh and cry over all the abominations that are done within it.**"
Ezekiel 9:4

God is particular about how we worship him. It is not just in the big things concerning the Sabbath that God is particular, but in the other things as well. Are we willing to work on Sabbath? Do we guard the edges of the Sabbath? What do we think about on the Sabbath?

The only way we can even begin to keep the Sabbath is to be fully converted. The only way we can truly sigh and cry over the abominations that dishonor God is also to be fully converted. Anything short of that is wickedness. Let's choose to follow God and Seek His face. Go to your closet and seek Him. Not just one time but everyday and start spending your time reading the Bible and the Spirit of Prophecy. In addition start studying the pillars of our faith so that you are fully grounded into the truth from the Bible itself. As Mrs. White says, don't lay these things aside for any other subject because our eternal life is at stake. Then choose to obey God.

As we near the close of time, there will be greater and still greater external parade of heathen power; heathen deities will manifest their signal power, and will exhibit themselves before the cities of the world; and this delineation has already begun to be fulfilled. By a variety of images the Lord Jesus represented to John the wicked character and seductive influence of those who have been distinguished for their persecution of God's people. All need wisdom carefully to search out the mystery of iniquity that figures so largely in the winding up of this earth's history. . . . In the very time in which we live, the Lord has called His people and has given them a message to bear. He has called them to expose the wickedness of the man of sin who has made the Sunday law a distinctive power, who has thought to change times and laws, and to oppress the people of God who stand firmly to honor Him by keeping the only true Sabbath, the Sabbath of creation, as holy unto the Lord. {TM 117.5}

A Distinct People With a Testing Message.--The Lord has been pleased to give His people the third angel's message as a testing message to bear to the world. John beholds a people distinct and separate from the world, who refuse to worship the beast or his image, who bear God's sign, keeping holy His Sabbath--the

seventh-day to be kept holy as a memorial of the living God, the Creator of heaven and earth. Of them the apostle writes, "Here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus."-- Letter 98, 1900. {Ev 233.3}

We do not go deep enough in our search for truth. Every soul who believes present truth will be brought where he will be required to give a reason of the hope that is in him. **The people of God will be called upon to stand before kings, princes, rulers, and great men of the earth, and they must know that they do know what is truth.** They must be converted men and women. God can teach you more in one moment by his Holy Spirit than you could learn from the great men of the earth. The universe is looking upon the controversy that is going on upon the earth. At an infinite cost, God has provided for every man an opportunity to know that which will make him wise unto salvation. How eagerly do angels look to see who will avail himself of this opportunity! **When a message is presented to God's people, they should not rise up in opposition to it; they should go to the Bible, comparing it with the law and the testimony, and if it does not bear this test, it is not true. God wants our minds to expand. He desires to put his grace upon us.** We may have a feast of good things every day; for God can open the whole treasure of heaven to us. We are to be one with Christ as he is one with the Father, and the Father will love us as he loves his Son. We may have the same help that Christ had, we may have strength for every emergency; for God will be our front guard and our reward. He will shut us in on every side, and when we are brought before rulers, before the authorities of the earth, we need not meditate beforehand of what we shall say. God will teach us in the day of our need. Now may God help us to come to the feet of Jesus and learn of him, before we seek to become teachers of others. {Review and Herald - RH, February 18, 1890 par. 23}

We should study the great waymarks that point out the times in which we are living. . . . We should now pray most earnestly that we may be prepared for the struggles of the great day of God's preparation. {Mar 161.5}

Those who place themselves under God's control, to be led and guided by Him, will catch the steady tread of the events ordained by Him to take place. Inspired with the Spirit of Him who gave His life for the life of the world, they will no longer stand still in impotency, pointing to what they cannot do. Putting on the armor of heaven, they will go forth to the warfare, willing to do and dare for God, knowing that His omnipotence will supply their need. {Maranatha - Mar 161.6}

There must be no neglect of the grace represented by the former rain. Only those who are living up to the light they have will receive greater light. Unless we are daily advancing in the exemplification of the active Christian virtues, we shall not recognize the manifestations of the Holy Spirit in the latter rain. It may be falling on hearts all around us, but we shall not discern or receive it. {Maranatha - Mar 219.4}

Only those who have been diligent students of the Scriptures and who have received the love of the truth will be shielded from the powerful delusion that takes the world captive. By the Bible testimony these will detect the deceiver in his disguise. To all the testing time will come. **By the sifting of temptation the genuine Christian will be revealed.** Are the people of God now so firmly established upon His word that they would not yield to the evidence of their senses? Would they, in such a crisis, cling to the Bible and the Bible only? **Satan will, if possible, prevent them from obtaining a preparation to stand in that day.** He will so arrange affairs as to hedge up their way, entangle them with earthly treasures, cause them to carry a heavy, wearisome burden, that their hearts may be overcharged with the cares of this life and the day of trial may come upon them as a thief. {GC 625.3}

The members of the church will individually be tested and proved. They will be placed in circumstances where they will be forced to bear witness for the truth. Many will be called to speak before councils and in courts of justice, perhaps separately and alone. The experience which would have helped them in this emergency they have neglected to obtain, and their souls are burdened with remorse for wasted opportunities and neglected privileges. {5T 463.2}

We see that efforts are being made to restrict our religious liberties. The Sunday question is now assuming large proportions. An amendment to our Constitution is being urged in Congress, and when it is obtained, oppression must follow. I want to ask, **Are you awake to this matter? and do you realize that the night cometh, when no man can work? Have you had that intensity of zeal, and that piety and devotion, which will enable you to stand when oppression is brought upon you? It does not seem possible to us now that any should have to stand alone; but if God has ever spoken by me, the time will come when we shall be brought before councils and before thousands for his name's sake, and each one will have to give the reason of his faith. Then will come the severest criticism upon every position that has been taken for the truth. We need, then, to study the word of God, that we may know why we believe the doctrines we advocate.** We must critically search the living oracles of Jehovah. {RH, December 18, 1888 par. 12}

You know not where you may be called upon to give your witness of truth. **Many will have to stand in the legislative courts; some will have to stand before kings and before the learned of the earth, to answer for their faith. Those who have only a superficial understanding of truth will not be able clearly to expound the Scriptures, and give definite reasons for their faith. They will become confused, and will not be workmen that need not to be ashamed. Let no one imagine that he has no need to study, because he is not to preach in the sacred desk. You know not what God may require of you.** {OHC 355.5}

I have been shown that many who profess to have a knowledge of present truth know not what they believe. They do not understand the evidences of their faith. They have no just appreciation of the work for the present time. When the time of trial shall come, there are men now preaching to others who will find, upon examining the positions they hold, that there are many things for which they can give no satisfactory reason. **Until thus tested they knew not their great ignorance.** And there are many in the church who take it for granted that they understand what they believe; but, until controversy arises, they do not know their own weakness. **When separated from those of like faith and compelled to stand singly and alone to explain their belief, they will be surprised to see how confused are their ideas of what they had accepted as truth.** Certain it is that there has been among us a departure from the living God and a turning to men, putting human in place of divine wisdom. {5T 707.2}

The servants of Christ are to prepare no set speech to present when brought to trial for their faith. **Their preparation is to be made day by day, in treasuring up in their hearts the precious truths of God's Word, in feeding upon the teaching of Christ, and through prayer strengthening their faith; then, when brought into trial, the Holy Spirit will bring to their remembrance the very truths that will reach the hearts of those who shall come to hear. God will flash the knowledge obtained by diligent searching of the Scriptures, into their memory at the very time when it is needed.** {OHC 356.2}

“He that loveth Me shall be loved of My Father, and I will love him, and will manifest Myself to him.” Jesus read the future of His disciples. He saw one brought to the scaffold, one to the cross, one to exile among the lonely rocks of the sea, others to persecution and death. He encouraged them with the promise that in every trial He would be with them. That promise has lost none of its force. The Lord knows all about His faithful servants who for His sake are lying in prison or who are banished to lonely islands. He comforts them with His own presence. **When for the truth's sake the believer stands at the bar of unrighteous tribunals, Christ stands by his side. All the reproaches that fall upon him, fall upon Christ. Christ is condemned over again in the person of His disciple. When one is incarcerated in prison walls, Christ ravishes the heart with His love. When one suffers death for His sake, Christ says, “I am He that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive forevermore, . . . and have the keys of hell and of death.”** Revelation 1:18. **The life that is sacrificed for Me is preserved unto eternal glory.** {DA 669.3}

The law of God should be loved and prized by God's true people now, more than ever before. There is the most urgent necessity of enforcing the words of Christ upon the mind and heart of every believer, both men and women, youth and children: **“Search the Scriptures.” Examine your Bibles as you have never done**

before. Unless you arise to a higher, holier attitude in your religious life, you will not be ready for the appearing of our Lord. There are many who are not purifying their souls by obeying the truth. As great light has been given them, God expects proportionate zeal, devotion, and faithfulness upon the part of his people. But there will be proportionate darkness, unbelief, and blindness as the truth is not appreciated and acted upon. {RH, December 11, 1888 par. 2}

12. What Biblical Doctrines does the Trinity teaching destroy?

Some think the Trinity issue versus the Father and His Son is only a minor problem. Not something to make a big thing out of it. However, this Chapter shows why knowing the truth about God is important for our salvation.

The Trinity doctrine obviously came into Christianity early in its history when the Christian church became progressively more pagan in its teachings. The Trinity doctrine describes a christianized form of a pagan god which was introduced into Christianity after the original apostles died. Today, the Catholic Church says that:

“The mystery of the Trinity is the central doctrine of Catholic Faith. Upon it are based all the other teachings of the church.” (*Handbook for Today's Catholic*, p. 16 - a post-Vatican II publication).

Thus its doctrines have changed from straight Biblical teachings to another body of teachings that is based on the Trinity doctrine.

The Adventist church also had a totally Biblical based theology at the beginning. But since then the SDA church has likewise accepted the Trinity doctrine, the central doctrine for various pagan beliefs. This change has since opened the door to massive changes within the theology of today's SDA church.

In this chapter we will see the influences of the Trinity doctrine over the SDA theological changes. In addition, we will see how the Trinity doctrine actually does away with most of the salvational teachings of the Bible. We will especially see how the Trinity doctrine actually destroys the very Gospel of Christ in describing how Jesus saves us.

The Trinity Doctrine has Directly Affected the Theology of the Church

I believe it is very important to understand the connection between the issue of who God is and the changing of our salvational doctrines which shows how God saves us. Indeed, I have become convinced that the Trinity teaching has actually helped open the door for the “new theology” to enter into the SDA church. It did it by two different methods.

1) Because the SDA church leaders said they believed in the Trinity, Barnhouse and Martin then believed that it was possible the Adventist church could actually be a Christian church and not a cult. They would not have even considered us to be Christian at all if we didn't believe in the Trinity! Thus the Trinity teaching allowed Barnhouse and Martin, in the 1950s, to start talking with certain leaders of the SDA church. These meetings gave certain leaders, within the Adventist church, the arm twisting they desired to bring the new theology thinking into the church. This new theology teaching is basically accepted by most Christian churches and some of these Adventist leaders thought that we should be holding the same teachings.

So, our belief in the Father and Son was actually a barrier that helped to keep us separate from the other churches. Once we changed to a Trinity-believing church, that barrier was removed and “the door opened” for a complete change of Adventist theology.

2) The Trinity doctrine itself has attributes that lead one away from the idea that God's law is to be upheld. Thus it allows people to start moving toward new theology ideas.

It all stems from the lie which Satan argued, that God's law was too severe and could not be obeyed. Many today are arguing the same thing, that we can never stop sinning while on this earth in the sinful state. The idea that we are saved by faith without any effort on our part is central to New Theology dogma. Thus, we do not overcome our sins with the New Theology!

The Trinity doctrine is the foundation for this kind of thinking. All three "members" of the Trinity must continue to exist in order for the Trinity-god to exist! So, "god the son" cannot die for us, to save us! The death of the Divine "God the Son" would mean the destruction of the Trinity-god. Thus the Trinity-god-Jesus cannot die on the cross having both divine and human aspects within him. The divine part of Jesus is actually pictured as being up in heaven with the Father and Holy Spirit in the form of the Trinity (The Trinity cannot be allowed to die, change, or be disrupted, or even separated).

What all this means is that "god the son" cannot die to uphold the law of God! Thus, the mechanism that this Trinity-god uses to save man does not hold up the law of God as being supreme! "god the son", who is divine, does not die that we might live. There is only a human sacrifice! So, the law of God itself is ignored. With this kind of understanding, we can now see how new theology thought is allowed to flourish. the Trinity doctrine is the kind of foundation that actually supports the new theology. (We will see this point more clearly when we actually study the logic of trinitarian thought on how it affects Biblical truths.)

Another point we need to consider: Since "god the son" did not die, he did not risk anything in order to save us! The Protestants generally believe that God is all powerful, that he is not limited to any constraints. They basically see Him as all powerful, able and willing to do anything He wants, because He is God.

Our Sanctification is also affected by this point. If god the son does not risk death, how could he risk becoming human like us as is described in the Bible? If he became human and then failed, he would be facing the very same kind of thing we face. Death!

Really, the whole aspect of Sanctification, of overcoming our sins, is ignored. "god the son" cannot help us keep the law of God with divine strength because He Himself cannot face death. He cannot experience it himself and he cannot be our example in overcoming sin.

This means Jesus is not trying to help us keep the law of God with Divine strength that He provides. Thus, the way is now open for the original Sin doctrine to state the reason why God the Son does not have to risk anything. Again, the whole mechanism designed to deal with the Law of God, to preserve God's law as supreme, is side-stepped.

It does not seem to matter whether; As a Catholic, one is saved by following a set of rules; Or whether as a Protestant, one is saved by faith without any effort on our part. The Trinity doctrine accommodates them both. Thus within the new theology of today's Adventist church, the idea that Jesus came with an unfallen nature, that we sinful humans have original sin not allowing us to stop sinning; It all fits in within the Trinity doctrine because the law of God is ignored.

The SDA church now no-longer seems to believe that total obedience to God's law is possible because of our sinful flesh, and that there is no heavenly atonement by Christ for us today. The church says that Christ only provides and makes available the atonement that was done at the cross! So, it is thought that we cannot overcome our sins. Thus, there is no second atonement that gives us power to overcome sin in these last days which are in the antitypical day of atonement. Remember that the righteous must live on this world without an intercessor at the end. How could that be if overcoming our sins is no longer possible?

But the original pillars of the Adventist church are different. The Adventist pillars are at war with both trinitarian and new theology teachings. Instead, Jesus comes to our world with both a fallen human nature and also with His divine nature. Nothing is kept back. He is risking everything for us with His life since His divine nature is held subject to his human nature even to the point of death. Because, if Jesus failed, He would have lost everything. Even His own life for eternity! Thank God, Jesus was human as we are, yet He did not sin! This was done so that the Law of God could be upheld and preserved. Jesus paid the price, demanded by the law so that we might be saved.

In addition, we have the infinite love of God who have given us His own Son, that we may be saved. Both God and the Son knew the great risk, but they loved us so much that Jesus came here to die and be our example so that we could be saved while the law of God is still preserved for all time.

The truth about God allows Jesus to be both fully divine and human. It also allows Jesus to die being fully human and fully divine. Thus the law of God is not ignored. Jesus comes with a fallen nature having sinful flesh. So, He became one of us yet He did not sin! Jesus overcame the temptations of this world just as we must overcome our sins. Thus, He became our example for overcoming sin. We are to overcome as He overcame! We, with our weak sinful arm of flesh, can grab onto the strong divine arm of God. Thus, we can overcome by combining divinity with humanity; Just as Christ did.

This understanding of the truth about God is basic historic Adventist doctrine. It does not accommodate the idea that we can just ignore the Law of God. Jesus died so that the price that the law requires could be paid. Thus, The Son of God died for our sins. Jesus was also our example to help us overcome our sins. Jesus now enables us to gain the victory over our sins because Christ personally makes atonement over our sins in the two compartment heavenly Sanctuary in Heaven. We now have the privilege of coming to the throne of Grace asking for both forgiveness and for power to overcome.

Now, let's see what the actual implications are to the Trinity doctrine:

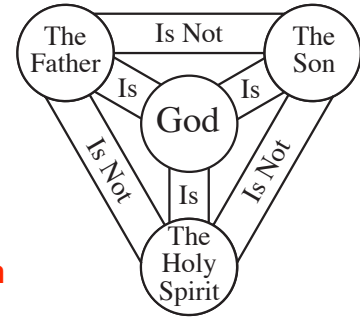
In the rest of this chapter, chapter 12. is not in final form. I had an idea and I wrote it up as an idea that went through the logic of the idea itself. I now wish to go back and find documentation on the internet, and from other sources, so I can add more depth and a better way to present it.

I want to try to show that the trinity doctrine really does influence and effect other doctrines and that there is an inter-connective aspect to the doctrines.

So take this next chapter for what it is, an idea that needs to be further explored before a final version can be reached. M. Brown

The Basic Mystery of the Trinity Doctrine

1. The Trinity God cannot be allowed to die, change, or be disrupted, or even separated. So . . .
2. **The Father, Son, and Holy Spirit together make the one living God.** God cannot be God with one part missing. Thus, it is impossible for any of the three to cease to exist.
3. **The Father, Son, and Holy Spirit cannot be separated from each other, even when the Son became a man.**



So, what are the implications of these basic concepts?

4. **The Father, Son, and Holy Spirit are thought to have always existed as the Trinity. They all have no beginning.**

We already know that God does not change (1); and that God cannot be God with one part of the Trinity missing (2); So The Father, Son, and Holy Spirit must have always existed as the Trinity God. God never had a beginning, thus The Father, Son, and the Holy Spirit had no beginning at all.

- 5 **The Son is not really the only begotten Son of God!**

We already know that the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit have always existed (4): So, the Son must not really be the only begotten Son of God! To be an only begotten Son of God, the Son must have had a beginning as is taught in Scripture:

From the Nicene Creed, the Catholics teach that the Son is “eternally the Son”. That means He was always God the Son all through eternity since he has never had a beginning. He always was and is. This is part of the mystery they espouse. The Adventist church has explained it differently. They have said that He is role-playing the part of the Son of God. They are just acting.

- 6 **The Son cannot become fully human.**

We already know that God does not change (1). So we know that god the son cannot change and become a man if God does not change.

- 7 **The Son cannot come down to the earth and be with us as a man.**

We already know that god the son cannot be separated from the father and holy spirit (3). Thus god the son, his divine self, cannot come down to the earth and truly be with us because he cannot be separated from the father and holy spirit.

- 8 **The Son cannot die!**

We already know that God does not change (1) and that God cannot be God with one “part” missing (2). So,

that means the divine god the son cannot die. It would do away with the Trinity.

9 The Divine Son of God did not die on the Cross!

We already know that god the son cannot die. (8) thus, He never died on the cross!

10 There must have been two natures that are separate from each other.

We already know that the son cannot become fully human (6), and we know that the son cannot fully separate himself (3) and come down to us (7). And we know that god the son cannot die nor did he die on the cross (8, 9). Thus the only way to explain this is that there must have been two totally separate natures that existed apart from each other.

Jesus must have had the human nature while the divine-god-the-son-nature must have remained in heaven. Thus Jesus has a human nature which dies. This is so he can be separated from the Trinity and be with man.

The divine god the son was in heaven, while the human Jesus was on earth.

11 The sacrifice of the Atonement on the cross was not made with A Divine sacrifice.

We already know that god the son cannot die (8) so we know that he never died on the cross (9). We also know that there must have been two separate natures. Jesus must have basically had the human nature while the divine nature was in heaven (10).

So only the human nature died. God the son never died. So, lost is the idea that it takes the death of a divine natured being to act as a sacrifice for our atonement.

12 God the Son could not have had the possibility of sinning!

We already know that the son cannot die (8). Thus, god the son did not have to face a risk in whether he would continue to live or not for eternity. So, he was not really tempted by satan because that would have meant his end.

13 God did not make a risk when He gave the Son to save mankind from sin!

Since god the son cannot die (8) and also that god the father really has no son (5)! On top of that, we know that god the son could not have had the possibility of sinning (12).

Thus, God never did make a risk when Jesus came to save mankind.

14 God has NEVER so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son,

Since the Trinity god has no true son (5) and never risked anything when Jesus came to this earth (8, 12, 13) what did the Trinity-god give us?

Thus, God never had an only begotten son that he loved to give us. So, the love of God is not clearly seen because he never needed to be willing to give up his son if the son sinned. John 3:16 no longer makes any sense because of the nature of the Trinity god.

15 In saving mankind, Jesus does not do anything to uphold the Law of God!

Since god did not risk anything in giving us his only son (5, 8, 13) and god the son never risked his own eternal life to save us (8, 9); That means the sacrifice Jesus made for us was actually made by the totally separate human nature (11)!

Thus, the Law of God is not retained in saving us. The Trinity god totally ignores the law of God because only a created being actually died on the cross! They side-stepped their own law!

16 The Son cannot be our example in overcoming sin in the flesh.

There are so many reasons why god the son was never like us: He was never fully human (6), he cannot die (8)! He is not able to sin (12)! He never risked anything (13)!

We certainly risk everything in our lives, because we are fully human and we can both sin and die!

Thus, god the son is not like us. He has untold advantages. He is god but we have weak human flesh.

17 The Son cannot be our intermediary in the Sanctuary in heaven.

Since god the son never risked anything (13) and did not overcome sins in the flesh like we do (16); He cannot act as an intercessor. He is not an intermediary between God and man because he never really became human (6). The Trinity god cannot change (1) The human and divine natures are thought to be completely separated, with the divine nature basically in heaven (10).

However, the most important reason is this: The sanctuary is where sins are forgiven. The Son pleads his own blood (which the Trinity god the son never actually shed since he never died (9).) god-the-son cannot deal with sins since the whole Trinity god side-steps the Law of God (15)! god the son never actually dies for our sins!

The purpose of a priest is to be an intercessor or an intermediary between God and the people. Because the real Jesus is both human and divine, man and God; He can truly qualify as our mediator. The Trinity doctrine denies this, since the Son would be part of the Trinity God, of one substance, and thus he cannot change! The Son cannot be an mediate with Himself; See [Galatians 3:20](#).

Scripture is very clear: “For there is one God and one Mediator between God and men, the Man Christ Jesus, who gave Himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time.” [1 Tim 2:5-6](#).

The following concepts are doctrines that flourish within the Trinity doctrine. The Trinity doctrine lays the groundwork for the following four concepts that are a part of the “New Theology”.

18 The Original Sin Doctrine tells us why we cannot overcome sin in the flesh. Thus it fits in perfectly with the points that are stipulated by the Trinity doctrine.

Most of the previous points we have seen up to this time, point to the fact that god the son is not trying to help us keep the law of God. The law of god is side-stepped and thus ignored.

Unlike the true Father and Son, who strive to help us gain the victory, the Trinity son is unable to help us at all since he does not have the same nature as we do, nor does he provide a divine sacrifice for the atonement! There is nothing “god the son” can do for us since he does not have the right qualifications for such a work!

Thus, it is easy to see how Original Sin fits within the Trinity doctrine. The way is now open for the Original Sin doctrine to come in and state the reason why God the Son does not have to risk anything. Original Sin explains why what is lacking is not needed.

Original Sin states that we have such an utterly deprived nature that we cannot stop from sinning. Again, the whole mechanism that is designed to deal with the Law of God, in the Trinity doctrine, to preserve God's law as supreme, is side-stepped. So, Original Sin is used to teach that Jesus did not really need to help us not to sin; Because, we had such a deprived nature that Jesus would not have been able to do anything with us.

In the Catholic church, the original sin is a basis for many pagan teachings. saying that there is no way to overcome sins, thus we must pay penance and do all kinds of works in order to be saved. Protestants are said to be saved by faith alone. It is said that we are saved by grace and not by works. So, the idea is fostered that man is saved by Jesus' sinless life and His sacrifice at the cross. Thus, there there is nothing we can do to warrant salvation.

If there is nothing we can do to be saved, then what is left is predestination, number 21 on the list (see below).

19 Jesus the man does not come with sinful flesh, a fallen nature. Rather, Jesus is said to come with an unfallen nature.

We have seen that the divine god the son does not die (8, 9). He does not sin (12) and he does not become a man (6, 7). Instead the two natures, human and divine are separate (10). What is it that would allow the human part also to not sin? Again, there can be no risk of failure etc. with "god the son".

We know that the actual divine nature cannot sin or die; But, what about the human nature that is somehow associated with the divine nature? How can the human part, Christ the man, not sin either?

To have the human part be sinless with no chance of sinning, he is said to have an unfallen nature. The Catholics give the man Jesus this sinless nature by the doctrine of the Immaculate Conception. Mary, Jesus' mother is excluded from partaking of Adam's imputed guilt described by the Original Sin Doctrine (18). Thus Jesus is not contaminated with original sin. The Protestants just have Jesus Himself having an unfallen nature.

So, the Trinity doctrine lays the groundwork for Original Sin and Original Sin necessitates that Jesus must have had an unfallen nature. Thus, Jesus did not have sinful flesh but rather, He had sinless flesh and an unfallen nature like that of Adam before the fall.

20 Cheap grace and Righteousness by Faith says we are saved by the blood of Christ.

The Trinity god makes no mention on how the righteousness of Christ can be given to His saints in the flesh (in reference to the law of God). For one thing, Jesus cannot be our example for overcoming sin (16) since he is not like us (6, 8, 10, 12, 13).

Because Jesus does not have the right qualifications due to the Trinity doctrine, he cannot help his saints from sinning. In addition, Original Sin helps to underline the idea that all there can be is cheap grace to save us. We ourselves cannot be made to be more righteous as long as we continue to have this original sin, the fallen, utterly deprived nature of Adam after his fall.

Cheap grace allows Christ to impute to all sinners the merits of the perfect life of Jesus. In this process, Bible sanctification is excluded from the picture. It is taught that obedience is entirely separate from the requirements of salvation. Also, since the blood of Christ is only human in nature, the law of God is also excluded from the picture. It takes a divine sacrifice for the Law of God to be satisfied.

Once again, righteous by faith and cheap grace emphasize the teachings of the Trinity which is not concerned with the Law of God.

21 Predestination: is where God alone chooses who will be saved.

The Trinity god makes no mention on how one can try to appeal to God to be saved. Jesus just does not have the right qualifications to help us when we appeal to God for help that we could be saved. You see there is no throne of grace in the second compartment of the heavenly sanctuary that we can come to, that our sins could be forgiven by Jesus our high priest.

For one thing, Jesus cannot be our example for overcoming sin (16). He because he is not like us (6, 8, 10, 12, 13). So, how could he intercede for us?

Since Jesus cannot be our example for overcoming our sins there is nothing that man can do to come to God because he is so utterly deprived with his original sin. The only way he can be saved is that God might choose Him according to His good pleasure. All the rest of humanity drift toward their natural way, which is toward hell. Thus we are either chosen by God or we are not chosen. With this kind of a doctrine, I can not see how it would be our fault to be lost; Only that God didn't choose us.

This doctrine fits in with both Original Sin and cheap grace, that the decisions we make and the struggle we make against sin; Does not matter at all.

The Previous concepts (Predestination, Original Sin or a totally deprived nature, and Righteousness by faith, etc.) can combine together to form a teaching. The following concept is a teaching that uses a group of concepts to teach how we are saved. This teaching also flourishes within the Trinity doctrine.

22 Calvinism:

Calvinism teaches that people are totally depraved or totally inadequate in their nature. people are thus morally and spiritually incapable of following God or redeeming themselves. Thus there is nothing we can do at all to be saved. That means we are at the complete and total mercy of God. He would be just in condemning all people for their sins. But They view that God has chosen to show mercy to some, but not all people.

Total Depravity: as a consequence of the fall of man into sin, every person is enslaved to sin. This doctrine of total depravity is derived from Augustine's explanation of Original Sin.

Unconditional election: Only the sins of the elect were atoned for by Jesus' death. Thus Jesus' atonement is meant for some and not all. Those who are saved are those that God chooses rather than the choice of each person and God's foreknowledge of that choice (which is the view point of Arminius).

Irresistible grace: The saving grace of God is only applied to those whom God has determined to save. Thus God overcomes their resistance to obeying the call of the gospel, thus God forces those whom He has chosen to be saved. Thus, God's Holy Spirit cannot be resisted, and the Holy Spirit causes the elect sinner to cooperate, to believe, to repent, to come freely and willingly to Christ.

Perseverance of the saints: Since God is sovereign and his will cannot be frustrated by humans or anything else, those whom God has called into communion with Himself will continue in faith until the end. All who are set apart by God will be saved.

Most of the previous points we have seen up to this time, point to the fact that god the son is not trying to help us keep the law of God. The law of god is side-stepped and thus ignored.

Unlike the true Father and Son, who strive to help us gain the victory, the Trinity son is unable to help us at all since he does not have the same nature as we do, nor does he provide a divine sacrifice for the atonement! There is nothing "god the son" can do for us since he does not have the right qualifications for such a work!

Thus, it is easy to see how Original Sin fits within the Trinity doctrine. The way is now open for the Original Sin doctrine to come in and state the reason why God the Son does not have to risk anything. Original Sin explains why what is lacking is not needed.

Original Sin states that we have such an utterly deprived nature that we cannot stop from sinning. Again, the whole mechanism that is designed to deal with the Law of God, in the Trinity doctrine, to preserve God's law as supreme, is side-stepped. So, Original Sin is used to teach that Jesus did not really need to help us not to sin; Because, we had such a deprived nature that Jesus would not have been able to do anything with us.

In the Catholic church, the original sin is a basis for many pagan teachings. saying that there is no way to overcome sins, thus we must pay penance and do all kinds of works in order to be saved. Protestants are said to be saved by faith alone. It is said that we are saved by grace and not by works. So, the idea is fostered that man is saved by Jesus' sinless life and His sacrifice at the cross. Thus, there there is nothing we can do to warrant salvation.

If there is nothing we can do to be saved, then what is left is predestination, number 21 on the list (see below).